

Mr Clarke
from
Fareham

Bierton Particular Baptists

11 Hayling Close,
Fareham,
Hampshire,
PO14 3AE

UK.

E mail: SecretaryDolores@yahoo.co.uk

Website: www.BiertonParticularBaptists.co.uk

Note From The Publisher

This story was first published under the title, “Converted on LSD Trip”, on 11th February 2001.

Mr. Clarke From Fareham contains far more.

A Foreword by Malcolm Kirkham

I first met David Clarke around 1965 in Aylesbury, a town just north of London. David went to the local secondary modern Grange school and I went to the Grammar School. Our worlds collided though when through mutual acquaintance I found the R & B band he played for “Fowler Mean”. I joined as the singer. We became firm friends, the other band members were very straight and po faced but Dave and I connected I was aware of his older brother mike he was notorious in Aylesbury and no one messed with him. He was also an entrepreneur and extremely intelligent. On a different path Mike could have succeeded in any field.



Dave and I had many adventures during our times together. He was naturally inclined to steal however and his brazen nature astounded me. If he saw something he wanted he just took it. This is something he shared with his brother. Dave and I drifted apart when he was incarcerated along with his brother in one place and I in another for separate crimes. After 50 odd years we are in touch again. This book get details the life and times of a criminal, his redemption and his present day mission. It is also a snap shot of a period time and a place. End Of.

Malcolm Kirkham 06 May 2017

B Foreword Dr Philip Fleming

By Dr Philip Fleming MA. BA, Bch. FRCPsych. DPM



“Converted on LSD Trip”

This book, the personal testament of David Clarke, in an autobiographical style. It charts his life, which became one of criminality and drug taking though an experience in 1970 of finding God whilst under the influence of LSD. Cynics may say that this was just an effect of drugs, but it is clear that the experience changed his life. Later when in court facing charges he admitted to many other crimes and was fortunate in receiving three years conditional discharge and not a prison sentence.

Since then David has combined his work as a lecturer in electronics with his mission of spreading the word of God. This is a scrupulously honest book recording both the difficulties he has faced as well as the successes in his life since 1970. A continuing worry is the fat of his brother, currently serving a long prison sentence in a Philippine jail who himself has recently found God.

“This is an inspiring story of a life that has been turned from crime to a positive account and may be of help to others who find them selves directionless and involved in crime and drug misuse”.

Dr. Philip M. Fleming. MA. BA, Bch. FRCPsych. DPM.

Consultant Psychiatrist with special responsibility for drug and alcohol misuse.

C Foreword Gregg Haslam

Rev. Gregg Haslam Senior Minister Westminster Chapel, London



Gregg Haslam

“David Clarke tells the story of his troubled violent past and his extraordinary life, in such a way that it re-tells the story of Jesus’ love that’s available for us all. Christ has the power to renew and reclaim anyone’s wasted years, no matter we’ve done, or how deep our shame. He can re-launch our lives on a brand new future that we could never have planned for ourselves.”

Westminster Chapel



London SW1E 6BS

D Foreword Samuel Ntoyimondo

Chaplain HMPS Nottingham

“ This moving story demonstrates the goodness and mercy of God and it is a clear proof that no one is beyond God’s grace, mercy and love. Whatever wrongdoings we do, God continues to call us back to Him and if we accept, He fulfils His plan for us to give us hope for the future. “

Please excuse the typo’s, errors in grammar and spelling. I was virtually illiterate until the age of 21 after which I learned to read and educate myself.

Please take time to understand what I am trying to

communicate as to get proof readers to work for love is very difficult.

I am sure the New Testament writers, some of which were unlearned men, had the same difficulties.

Sincerely Yours

David Clarke

Contents

A Foreword by Malcolm Kirkham

B Foreword Dr Philip Fleming

C Foreword Gregg Haslam

D Foreword Samuel Ntoyimondo

A True Story

1 Confession to 24 Crimes

Testimony of Barry Crown

Testimony of Cyril Bryan

Testimony of Mr E Connet

I Speak In Court

The Bucks Herald Weekly Paper

Seeking Truth

Voice Of Christ

Difficulty

I Tell My Story

2 My Early Life

St Barnabus School

Oldham

3 Garston Infant School

German Teacher

David And The Hamster

Congregational Sunday School

Cecil The Sissy And Air Pistol

Wrexham Holiday

The Fair Ground, Stolen Bike

A Stolen Crystal Set

Stealing Radio Equipment

A Visit From The Police

4 Senior Secondary Schools

Michael and Boxing

My Visit to Soho

5 Our Move To Wilstone

Keeping Myself Busy

I Ride A 350 cc Triumph

The Big Freeze 1962

Short Stay Back To Watford

My First Matchbox Radio

Aylesbury: Our new Home

David’s Do It Your Self-kart

I Steel Push Bikes

I Meet Mrs Grace Knight

My teenage years leaving School

Conversation On The Intercom

A Confident 15 year old

A Holiday in Newquay

The Headlands Hotel

8 Our Rock Group

Steal An Amplifier Catholic Church

The Fowler Mean our Rock Group

A Secret

Oxford Bags

My First Girl Friend

Carknapping (Steeling Cars)

The Great Train Robbery

The Kray Twins

Kray’s Imprisonment

Mods Scooters, Bikes Bubble Car

Pete Townhsend Gives Us A lift

9 The Bubble Car

Dr Clarke’s Case

Off To Margate

Caught By The Police

Bubble Car Blows Up

I Get The Sack

Plan A Break In

The Break In

10 Canterbury Prison

6					7
Canterbury Prison together	41	My Citroen DS Car	54	City and Guilds London Institute Award	63
Canterbury Prison in Kent	42	Stolen Mini from Hemel Hempstead	54	Dr Gill’s Doctrinal Divinity	64
Hair Style Change	42	Returning The Trolley Jack	55	My Theological Training	64
What Sentence Have You Got?	43	Dealing With Sin and Temptation	55	Michael Goes To Spain	64
Wormwood Scrubs	43	Hippies In The Shed	55	My Visit To Spain	64
Dover Borstal (The Citidal)	43	The Shed at Mount Street	55	I Leave The Pentecostal Holiness Church	65
Borstal Boy	43	14 Going to Church	55	A Denial of Imputed Righteousness	65
Electrical Installation Course	44	I Attend Various Churches	56	Scripture Should Guide Us Not Feelings	65
Paternity Suite	44	Giving A Testimony	56	Arminian Righteousness	65
11 My Release From Borstal	44	I Am Baptized	57	I Am Made Redundant	65
Mods, Skinheads, Greasers at Yarmouth	45	Mormons and Baptism	57	18 Working for Granada TV Rentals	66
Newquay Here We Come	46	Baptism In The Spirit	58	I Am Promoted To Service Manager	66
The Beatles Magical Mystery Tour	47	The Christian Life	58	My visit to Northern Ireland	66
Our Holiday A Place of the Sun	47	The Divine Nature of Jesus Christ	58	I Seek Ian Paisley	67
I Am A Waiter At The Gull Rock Hotel	47	Preaching Not Musical Entertainment	58	Suspicious Looking Suit Case	67
We Return Home To Aylesbury	47	Giving My Testimony	59	The Wrong Part of Belfast	67
Our Trip To Shoreham	48	Every Day The Sabbath Day	59	We Go To The Reformation Conference	68
The History Of The Jews And 1967	48	Authorized Version of the Bible	59	We Employ Michael Nicholson	68
Pat Jones And The Bully	48	Giving Money	59	I am Poached by C. J Ward and Son	68
12 Conversion from Crime to Christ	48	Doing The Work Of An Evangelist	59	Victor Prince The Crombie Over Coat	69
A Bad LSD Trip	48	I was a Hyper-Calvinist	60	Contemplation On Divine Predestination	70
Dave I Am With You	51	Doctrinal Summery	60	19 Bierton Strict &Particular Baptists	70
All I could Do Was Tell Them	51	I Hear Dr Martin Lloyd Jones Preach	60	Distinguishing Doctrines of Grace	71
Why Boast	51	16 Getting a Job	61	Denham’s Hymns	71
13 What after Salvation	51	Acting Foolishly	61	The Doctrines of the Gospel	71
Evidence of the New Birth	51	Working For Self	62	This Jesus Had Called Me	72
What To Do With Stolen Goods	52	Delivered from fire Morgan Sports Car	62	Not All Preaching Was Good	72
Seek To Tell Others	52	Sally The Oil Burning Goose	62	Miss Ruth Ellis	72
My own ignorance never read the Bible	52	I Find Work In Lowestoft	62	Miss Bertha Ellis	72
Difference at College	53	The Elim Pentecostal Church	62	Church Anniversary Services	72
I Tell Rupert	53	I am a Calvinist I Speak To The Elders	63	Waddesdon Hill Strict Baptist Chapel	73
Turning From The world	53	I Speak At The Factory	63	Benjamin Keeche’s Chapel	73
Religious And None Religious Persons	53	17 Pentecostal Holiness Bierton	63	Barton Le Clay Hope Chapel	74
Kept By The Power And Grace Of God	53	Five points of Calvinism	63	Meeting Other Christians and Friends	74
14 What To Do With Stolen Goods	54	Working for Mr C J Ward and Son	63	Excessive Work And Depression	74

8				9			
A Range of doctrinal differences	78	A Spanking From the Pulpit	87	28 John Metcalfe Tyler’s Green	101	33 We Move to Fareham	118
I Am Appointed Secretary	78	Is Corporal Punishment Correct ?	88	Paul Rowland And I Visit John Metcalf	102	My Doubts About God	119
And Correspondent	78	24 The Papal Visit 1982	88	The Shot Gun And Our Pockets Searched	103	Moving to Fareham I Turn From God	119
Church Minutes A Cause Of Concern	78	Our Home In Bierton	89	Christ Righteousness Imputed	103	My Wife Questions The Reality Of God	120
21 Caterham Strict Baptist Holiday	78	I write to D.B. an Anglican Vicar	89	Justification	103	Michael goes to Thailand	120
I Meet Other Evangelicals	78	25 I Go Fishing For Men	91	Justification by Blood	104	Michael Writes Home Seeking Help	121
Preparation For Marriage	79	A News Paper Report	91	My response to John Metcalfe	104	Turning Point	122
Regarding Marriage Counselling	79	Out Come Of The Meeting	92	29 I leave the Bierton Church	106	Michael Returns From Thailand	123
Marriage	79	Stephen Royce and family at Eaton Bray	93	I Secede from the Bierton Church	106	Motor Bike Burnt Out	123
Our move to Luton	79	Stephen Added Articles	93	I Preach at Home	107	34 A Dramatic Change (The Fall)	124
Our move to Linslaid	79	The Holy Table	93	I Experience Anxiety	107	Meeting Silver Girl	124
The Isle of Skye	80	Television Radio and Cassette Recorder	93	A Very Serious Issue Occurs	107	Making Music	124
Speak To The Question	80	Escorted out of St. Albans Abbey	94	I Learn The Sense of Strict Communion	107	Falling in love	124
Called Before The Elders	80	Playing “Fantastic tricks”	95	A City Whose Builder And Maker Is God	107	Leaving My Wife and Children	124
Silence Woman These Are Guests	80	26 Waddesdon Strict Baptist Chapel	96	I Seek a City	107	A Prodigal Son	125
Portree Rev Frazer MacDonald	81	Association of Metropolitan	96	30 The Bierton Society of Strict	107	I Was Made To Walk The Plank	125
I Was Questioned The “Free Offer”	81	My request turned down	97	Our Articles of Religion	107	35 Number 2 Hayling Close	126
A Return To The Bierton Church	81	Try To Buy the Waddesdon Hill Chapel	97	Custom and Practice	108	A Period Between Two Wives	126
Angels Come To Help	81	27 Truth Causes A Division	97	31 The Closure of the Bierton Chapel	109	I Wanted More Room	126
What was All That About?	82	Particular Redemption	97	Closure of the Chapel	109	Harrods of Abshott	126
Prevented From Buying A House	82	School Hymn Book	98	Secession	109	Shopping For Other People	126
22 Bierton Gospel Standard Cause 1981		A Church Meeting To Resolve The Issue	98	Our Move to Snailbeach	109	The Television License	126
Ruth Ellis a Church Member Dies	83	Mr King Honourable Dismissal	98	Second Bout Of Depression	110	I Had Moved In And Simon Knew It	127
Mr Collier, Pastor of Linslaid	83	Chairman Comments Upon The Sermon	98	32 We Move to Luton	110	I Take Over The House at Hayling Close	127
I Meet Dr Ian Paisley At Oxford	84	The Holy Table (No idolatry Here)	99	Discipline Methods At Luton College	111	I Take in lodgers	127
Rescuing Michael’s Roles Royce	84	I Preach A Moving Sermon in 1983	99	Muslims Want to Convert Me	112	A Run in with the Police	128
23 A Call to Preach the Gospel	85	Mr Collier Dies	99	Entrepreneurial Enterprise	112	I was sewn up and eventually released	129
I Did Not Believe In Bible Colleges	85	Mr Crane of Lakenheath	99	The Apple Mac Computer	113	My House Becomes Full	129
Wolverhampton Polytechnic	85	Requested Help With Article 26	100	Entrepreneurial Satellite Television	113	The House Court	129
An Ulterior Motive	86	I Am Asked To Help	100	A Problem	116	I Move Into A Tent In The Back Garden	130
Questioned about the Law of Moses	86	What Doth Hinder Me Being Baptized	100	A Take Over and I am Paid to Resign	116	Do I Need A Good Woman Or A Minder?	130
Mr Hill’s Conclusion	86	Paul Rowland Singing of Psalms	100	Bipolar Disorder or Manic Depression	117	A Fresh Look At Christian Marriage	131
Sent by the Church to Preach	86	Linslaid and Children’s Hymns	100	Third Bout of Depression	117	Seeking to help Alan and Sam	131
I Preach At Various Churches	86	Meeting Richard Bolt	101	Symptoms of Manic Depression	117	36 Michael and the Philippines	132
Hats Or Head Coverings For Ladies	87					Our Mother Dies	132

10					11
No Sympathy for my Brother	132	Rupert Bear helps David	147		156 Registration Trojan Horse International
Michael was set up (entrapment)	133	Desperate Measures Rock Band	147	News of Michael’s conversion	156 No Rest For The Sole Of My Feet
Crime Prevention Programs	133	I Build The Coffin	147	I Publish Converted On Lsd Trip	156 Serious Errors Held
Portsmouth Skate Park	134	My Ford Fiesta	147	Cast Net The Other Side Of The Ship.	156 Bierton Particular Baptist College
Hasting and Backyard	134	House nearly burnt down	148	Michael Is Baptized In The Prison	157 Oliver Cromwell
Isaac Clarke King of Southsea 2011	134	Coffin Stolen	148	Questions for Michael Clarke	158 Education Is The Way Forward
Other Criminal Prevention programs	134	Not To Be Deterred	149	John Sawyers funeral	159 A Note To Prospective Teachers
Being In The World Not Of The World	134	Morgan Was Canned	149	My redundancy at Fareham College	159 A Note To Prospective Students
BMX stunt at Portsmouth Harbour (1995)	135	A Problem of Stolen Equipment	150	Don’t Judge A Book By Its Cover	160 Remaining Members Bierton Church
Back flip over the Fiesta	135	Urgent	151	Fareham College Guilty	160 42 Bierton Particular Baptists
My Divorce August 1996	135	Goods Recovered	151	Gordon Smith Contacts Me	161 (Pakistan)
Would I ever marry Silver Girl ?	135	Ging Dies	151	The Decision To Go To Help Michael	161 Ministers
The Place of our Marriage	136	Should I pay Council Tax?	153	A Legal Matter From Now On	161 Chairman Official Minister
A Wedding reception at Asda	136	Now Regards The Caravan	154	39 Mission to Philippines August 2001	162 Introduction
37 I Buy number 11 Hayling Close	137	38 Brothers Arrest The Philippines	154	Trojan Horse International	162 Articles of Religion
The Fareham Registry Office	137	Michael Unaffected By My Conversion	154	William Poloc Our first Trojan Warrior	162 Our Objectives
I Build Extra Room Above The Garage	138	Great Concern	154	Before the Cock Crows	164 43 Bierton Particular Baptist College
Financial Settlement Divorce Won’t Help	138	Michael’s Call For Help	154	Should I obey God or Man?	165 In The UK and Pakistan
I Was A Murderer	139		Michaels Letter	A Commendation from Prince Charles	165 Dave Stages Punk Opera
The Spare Rib	139			Critics Silenced	166 An Invitation To Pakistan
Rebekah Is Born	139			Our Second Mission	166 Fareham’s ‘Borstal Boy’
Our first Holiday away in France	139			Help Requested From The UK	166 Borstal Boy’s Visa Problems
Insecurity	139			Help from the Chief Chaplain	167 None Conformist Place of Worship
My belief Sends Destreses Silver Girl	140			Medical and Psychological Examination	167 44 Christian Times Magazine
Help Of God Needed	140			Interpretation of findings	167 Christmas Times Magazine Issue 2
Our Seperation	141			40 My return to the UK	167 My Christmas Message (for this issue)
Diary Entry	141			The Closure of the Bierton Chapel	167 Christian Times Magazine, Issue 9
Women Elders at Warsash	142			Michael’s Death and Burial	168 The West And The Quran
I Leave The Church At Warsash	142			Death Row New Bilibid Prison	168 The Bierton Crisis
38 Trouble At Fareham College	142			Funding of the Mission	169 Mary Mary Quite Contrary
Steven Murry	143			A Decision To Stay In The Philippines	169 The Parousia
Elly’s Go Kart Nearly Losses Her Ear	145			Opposition To Our Work	169 Contact Details
Rock and Real Music	145			Work Planted in Baguio Continues	169
A Christmas card for Miss Bulled	146			41 Our Second Trip To Baguio City	170
The Family	146			News from the Philippines	170

A True Story

This is a true story of David Clarke, born in Oldham Lancashire, in 1949.

During the 60’s he and his older brother Michael began to enjoy lives of crime, promiscuity and infamy during their teenage years, whilst living in Aylesbury, Buckinghamshire and they lived with their parents and younger sister in Aylesbury and became criminals. They were both sent to prison in 1967 for malicious wounding and carrying a firearm without a license. David served his time in a young persons Borstal Training Institute at Dover, and Michael served his time in Maidstone Prison.

On leaving Borstal in 1968, David was determined to have a good time living a life of crime, with no fear or belief in God, respect for society, parents, or the wider family. He proceeded on a three-year career of undetected crime until he met a Christian woman who informed him that his life style was wrong.

It became David’s opinion that Christianity was for people who could not enjoy life, or stand on their own two feet.

On the 16th of January 1970 David was arrested whilst he experienced a bad trip on LSD but not by the Police. It was by Jesus Christ who spoke to him after he had cried out to God for help. Jesus said to David that the horrors that he had experienced were nothing compared to what hell was like.

David turned away that Friday night, from a sinful life of crime and immorality to follow Christ as best he could.

David began to read the bible immediately, and other Christian books, and attended a wide range of churches. He finally confessed to the police to 24 crimes that he had committed during his release from Borstal in 1968 and conversion in January 1970.

David eventually joined the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church in 1974. And then trained as a Lecturer commencing teaching electronics at Luton College of Higher Education, and taught for 22 years in both higher and further education colleges, until 2001.

The Bierton Church, which was founded in 1831, became a Gospel Standard listed cause, and in 1982 David was called by the Lord and sent by the church to preach the gospel where ever the Lord opened up the door for him to speak.

David then sought to reach his old friends from

the past, and organized a preaching meeting at the Bierton chapel in 1983, inviting all his old friends to come and hear of all what the Lord had done for him. Providentially that preaching meeting was televised on video and is available on YouTube under the title:

[“David Preaching at Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist” 5th June 1983” \(Click to view\).](#)

David recalls that it became apparent after this meeting his real troubles began, and he seceded from the Bierton Church in 1984. An account of this secession was written by David’s own hand entitled, “The Bierton Crisis”.

This story is a complete account of David’s early life, experience of conversion from crime to Christ and life in the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church. He concludes that men may begin well in their faith towards God, trusting in the person and finished works of Jesus Christ alone for their salvation, but then **fall from grace falling** into the error of seeking to please God by works according to their own inventions or distortions of the Law of Moses. They fall into the trap of making themselves **“perfect in the flesh”** and then judge others who do not act like them.

The story continues to the time of Michael’s arrest in the Philippines, in 1995, and his 16-year prison sentence.

The story goes on through to Michael’s own conversion from crime to Christ, in New Bilibid Prison some 30 years after David own conversion to Christianity. This occurring after he was convinced that Jesus was the Christ, the son of the living God, through reading CS Lewis’s book, “Mere Christianity”. It tells of his baptism as a Christian in an old oil drum in that prison in September 2000.

This story demonstrates the manifold grace of God, in saving two brothers from a life of sin, crime and immorality, through the person of the Lord Jesus Christ.

This book is really David’s confession and testimony written for the **defence and confirmation of the gospel**. David also believes the things that have happened to him have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel. Phil 1. verse and 7 and verse 12.

David’s solution to help and assist in the promotion of the gospel of the lord Jesus Christ is the creation of the Bierton Particular Baptist Open College (an

Internet Cloud and also in the formation f Bierton Particular Baptist College in Pakistan. This is outlined in the last chapter of this book. Those wishing to be trained and educated In the doctrines of grace can enrol and obtain all the assistance they need.

1 Confession to 24 Crimes

(The court case)

It was real, absolutely real, but none of my friends really believed me. All I could do was tell them what had happened to me, and that was what I did. I told them all, the long, the short and the tall. As many of them as I could. They thought I had gone mad after taking LSD.

Jesus Christ had spoken to me and rescued me from a bad LSD trip on Friday evening, 16th January 1970. He had said that what I had been going through was nothing compared to what hell was like. I now knew the way and was determined to tell the others. I had become a Christian and no longer needed to live the life style that I had adopted, which had involved crime, drugs, promiscuity, flash cars and fame. I had been born again.

I was now responsible for sorting out all my stolen gear. What could be done with a builder’s shed and stolen cars? I still had in my possession many stolen goods, which included the 48-foot by 24-foot. builder’s shed, which we had stolen one night from a building site at Berkhamstead, and a lovely “G” reg. Mini, stolen from Hemel Hempstead, which was in the process of being “rung”. Ringing meant replacing and old mini with legitimate registration documents and number plates with a new one. My new mini was being used to replace it. This was to be my new car. I also had a Morris Minor Traveller, which had been “rung” and was being used as a hire car. I had stolen garage equipment, which included an air compressor, electric welding equipment, spray guns and a trolley jack. I also had several pieces of electrical test equipment, which included oscilloscopes, AVO meters and Colour TV’s. I had all the garage equipment I needed to repair and spray cars.

I had a lovely Citroen DS car in the builder’s shed, which was being repaired. I obtained this car through swapping it for a colour TV set. The only problem was that I had stolen the TV set from an old people’s at Redfields old peoples home in Winslow, Buckinghamshire.

I also had two nice speedboat engines, getting

ready for the summer of 1970. All in all I had had a real good time full of excitement and fun.

In fact I had been stopped in the midst of my career, which involved stealing all kinds of goods to have a good time. I had intended to have a caravan, a speedboat, water skis, aqualung diving gear, flash cars, motorbikes, and clothes and so on, all through stealing. I was in fact stopped whilst in the midst of my career but not by the police. It was Jesus Christ who had called me by name and I followed him.

What to do with stolen goods after one becomes a Christian

I thank God he intervened again a year later and His hand was clearly seen once more. I had no one else to help. As I write this I take encouragement in the faithfulness of God to me in never leaving me or forsaking me. I realize now I was kept through the power and grace of our Lord Jesus Christ to bare witness today, to many people of the goodness and mercy of God.

The problem was solved by a visit from the C.I.D.

I was sitting at the table in our kitchen at 37 Finmere Crescent one evening in late 1971, when a knock came on the door. I had two visitors, a detective constable Robson and a younger man. I was greeted quite politely but with sure and certain words “ You are charged with stealing a colour television set “ and “would you accompany us down to the police station to make a statement”.

I knew instantly what I must do and say. I saw the hand of God and believed this was all his doing but I did not know the outcome. Leaving the outcome to God I asked the two men to sit down in the kitchen and I admitted the charge. At this DC Robson seemed most relieved, for he said to me later, he had thought I would be very difficult and awkward and deny the charge.

I explained I would certainly come with them to the police station and make a statement but I wanted to speak to them about other things first. I said I had many crimes I wished to tell them about but wanted to tell them first of all why I was informing them.

I wanted it to be known that they would not have been able to find out about my crimes unless I confessed to them and I wanted to testify to the saving work of Jesus Christ that he had saved me from my former criminal way of life a year previously and that I did not wish to get off lightly with this confession

14

CONFESSIO

Chapter 1

but rather bear testimony for Christ. For in no way could my crimes be discovered unless I tell them and owned up to them. I had a lot of property, which could be returned.

I went with them to the police station and spent the rest of the evening making writ ten statements giving details of my crimes. I was detained that evening in the police cells at Walton Street police station in Aylesbury, not that I was a stranger to prison cells. My shoelaces were removed but I was allowed my New Testament (Authorized Version, working man’s pocket addition).

I had to appear in Aylesbury’s Magistrates Court on the 9th February 1971 and answered two charges of burglary and one of theft. I also asked for 21 other crimes of theft to be taken into consideration, all of which had been committed since I left Borstal, between September 1967 and 16th January 1970. I had decided I did not need legal representation, as I would speak for my self.

With my past record of probation and Borstal training it was quite expected that I would be sent to prison. I was quite OK with this because I deserved it and I believed God was in this and had a definite purpose in this event. I prepared for this by setting my affairs in order at home and gave directions that my Mini Traveller, which I had rebuilt, was to be given to Barry Crown, if I got sent down. I believed that whatever happened to me the outcome was of God and there would be good reason for it. I thought I might be being sent to prison so as to preach the gospel to inmates. A friend of mine Mr Peter Murray was concerned about my court appearance and suggested I get some written testimonials from some of my Christian friends and he felt he ought to appear in person and speak on my behalf. The friends who wrote were Barry Crown, Cyril Bryan, Tom Thompson and Eric Connet. I am including these letters, which were sent to court. These people all testify to the saving grace of God in changing my life. These are some of the written testimonies:

Testimony of Barry Crown

R.B Crown 45, Mitcham Walk, Aylesbury. Buckinghamshire

To the Clerk to the Magistrates

Dear Sir,

6th February 1970

I am a graduate of Salford University, and hold a

B.Sc.in Civil Engineering. I am at present an employee of Aylesbury Borough Council, working under Mr. Hanney, the Borough Engineer and Surveyor. I have held this post since September 1970.

Chapter 1

Shortly after taking up residence in Aylesbury I befriended Mr. David Clarke whom I met at the Full Gospel Church, Rick fords Hill. I found David to be a true and sincere Christian seeking to spread the Gospel of Jesus Christ and to give personal testimony of the salvation through Jesus Christ, which he himself had experienced.

David told me how he had been miraculously converted on January 16th 1970. And have the subsequent change in his whole manner and outlook to life. Before his conversion he confessed to a life of drugs and theft, but now he no longer had any desire or pleasure in such things, since Christ destroyed the power of such in his life.

For the six months I have known David I have been a witness to the truth of his testimony and I know him as a person who is a completely honest and trustworthy follower of the Christian faith.

Yours Sincerely,

R. B. Crown.

Testimony of Cyril Bryan

176 Cambridge Street Aylesbury

To the Clerk to the Magistrates

2/2/71

Dear Sir,

I am privileged to write a testimony to you concerning David Clarke, and I count it a privilege because it is to the glory of God.

I have known this young man through conversations and meeting with him, through the church I attend in Aylesbury. The Full Gospel Testimony Church at Rickfords Hill.

What I wish to bring to your notice is the wonderful change that has taken place in him as a result of him believing the gospel and receiving the Lord Jesus Christ as his personal saviour, according to the scriptural instruction and ordinances.

The change of character and speech is miraculous, as are all the works of God, and as a believer in the Lord Jesus Christ for 30 years; I know that David Clarke is a transformed person, by the grace of God. As are we all who know the reality of the new birth as taught by Johns Gospel.

Chapter 1

CONFESSIO

15

You will know his past life, I testify to his new life in Christ Jesus. Yours Sincerely,

C Bryan.

Testimony of Mr E Connet

E.H. Connet

125 Park Street,

Aylesbury,

2nd February 1971

TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN

This is to certify that I have known Mr. Clarke for a period of approximately 9 months since his conversion to Christianity. I am fully persuaded that he has turned his back on his past life and changed for the better.

He is now earnestly endeavouring to make amends for his past mistakes and even influence others to turn their lives over to God, as he has done.

My object in writing this testimonial is that it may help to throw some light on David’s character from one who knows him as a Christian.

Yours Faithfully,

E Connet.

I Speak In Court

I appeared in court on the 9th February 1971, dressed in my dark blue (Mod) suit. I pleaded guilty and then a report from the police was read and I was given leave to speak for myself. I spoke extempore (without notes- trusting in the Lord for all the help I needed) describing my pre-convention days up to my conversion. I also spoke about life since being a Christian explaining my difficulties with respect to the stolen goods that I had in my possession.

I was able to speak of what Jesus had done for me in a way that only God could have worked.

After this Peter Murray spoke on my behalf confirming my testimony.

This happened on Tuesday 9th February 1971, a date that proved significant to me 3 years later.

I was amazed, so were all my Christian friends. The magistrates thought I was trying to be a martyr. I do not know how or why. They obviously thought I should be sent to prison but part of my punishment would be I was not going to get what I wanted. God smiled. We smiled with him. It was good to be a child of God.

The Bucks Herald Weekly Paper

The whole court appearance was reported in the

The shed was said to be worth £400. The mini was brand new and worth £672. The price of a terraced house at that time was £2000.

I Tell My Story

I wish to tell my story starting when I was born (natural birth) and lead the reader until my conversion when the Lord Jesus spoke to me (second birth).

I then wish to speak about being a Christian and seeking to follow the Lord and meeting with the many and varied Christian groups and people. I wish to share with the reader how I learned the distinctive truths of the distinguishing doctrines of grace and sovereignty of God, which led me to joining the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church.

In this account I relate my call to preach and I list the many churches I share the gospel with until the very sad occasion of my secession from the Bierton Church due to a departure for the truth. The church fell into the error of allowing general redemption being taught and a falling away into the error of the Law of Moses becoming their rule of life and conduct, rather than the Gospel. My secession being fully recorded on my publication, “**The Bierton Crisis**”, which I now believe could serve as a real help to many churches as in this account I name the many errors that I found to be prevalent, in those days amongst believers, and I point out the truth and scriptural view, which opposed those who held differing views.

It is my desire that this will serve to help and edify fellow Christians, and those seeking the truth as it is in Jesus Christ.

2 My Early Life

I was born on the 16th February 1949 at 9.50 AM, in Boundary Park General hospital, Oldham, Lancashire. My mother’s name was Elsie Dyson Clarke who was married to my father Thomas George Clarke some time after the war. She informed me that this hospital was next to Oldham Athletic football ground.

We lived with my mother’s father in his house at 26 Fleet Street, Clarksfield, Oldham. My granddad’s name was Watts Ormrod and he was a retired craftsman and senior member of a Trades Union.

Boundary Park Hospital



This Is Where I Was Born

His hair was white, which I am told happened due to an accident at work when a large rivet was pushed through his hand. I had a brother, who was two and a half years older than me, Michael John (spelt Michael instead of Michael due to my mother’s stubbornness when he was named at the registrar’s office. The official informed her that the way she had spelt Michael was in fact wrong, and my mum reacted at being corrected and insisted it would be spelt just as she had written it.

The Clarke Family



My Parents



Thomas George Clarke Elsie Dyson Clarke

My mum and dad were both in the armed forces and were very proud to be British. Dad was in the

Army and mum was in the Royal Air Force.

I was christened at Christ’s Church, Glodwick and my Godfather was David Maltby of 382 Barton Road; Stratford and was a sides man at the Church on Barton Road. He gave me at that time a bible with a text of scripture written on the inside cover. Prov. 3. 6 “In all thy ways acknowledge him and he shall direct thy paths “.

I have found a baptism certificate dated 3rd April 1949, where it states I became a member of Christ the child of God, and an inheritor of the “Kingdom of Heaven”. This however is wrong, as I did not become a member of Christ until I was born again on The 16th January 1970, which I speak about later.

My Baptismal Certificate



David’s Baptismal Certificate 3rd April 1949

I remember attending the church and Sunday school at Christchurch, which was just along the road from our house in Fleet Street. On one occasion I was so cozy, sitting on the pew, I fell asleep and woke up with a jolt wondering where I was, just as the vicar had finished his sermon. I had been lulled into sleep by the stimulating sermon. I haven’t changed even to day. I must have been about 3 or 4 years old. It was my mother’s idea to take my brother and I to Sunday school.

St Barnabus School

At Sunday school I remember we painted pictures of houses and still remember wondering why did the teacher draw the house with the door in the middle of the building and windows either side of the door. This was because I knew we lived in a house in a terrace and our door was to one side, just like the other houses in the street. I had no spiritual impressions of the Lord Jesus Christ from these times.

Barnabus Sunday School



St. Barnabus Sunday School Building

Just across the street from our house there was a great Roman Catholic Church building, and living accommodation, surrounded by a high wall. It was built of red engineering bricks and several stories high with stained glass windows along the long church building. I remember looking up at the crooked lightening conductor and I still get the feeling of austerity and awkwardness when wondering what was behind that wall. It produced the same feeling in me when I had the story of Toby Twirl red to me. In that story he meets a giant who lived behind a great high walled castle. I was afraid to go near, or to even think of climbing the wall, or trespass in the grounds. I did not know it was a Roman Catholic Church building until about 25 years later when my mother informed me.

At that time I knew of no other religion than that of the Church of England, I assumed my mother was right in all such matters and so the Catholics were wrong.

I remember the street lamps because a man use to come around each night to light them as they were gas and he had a small ladder, which he carried with him, pointed at one end. He climbed the ladder and lit the

lamps each night. I assume they were gas lamps.

Roman Catholic Building



The Roman Catholic Building

The Back Of Our House



Back Yard of 26 Fleet Street (Where I lived)

I remember my favourite sweets were what was called Kylie, it is called sherbet now. We could also buy a very small loaf of bread called a penny loaf.

At that time when I was about 4 years old I wanted to go to another Sunday school (I did not know at the time it was at a church building), which was at Lee’s Road. My mother must have taken me there before. On this occasion it was Saturday morning and I did not believe there was no Sunday school that day. After being dressed I think my mother must have humoured me and did not take me seriously. I said I was going to Sunday school. I left home, I do not think my Mum realized and I walked at least two miles along Balfor Street and along the busy Lee’s Road and found the building, to my disappointment it was all locked up. On my return I wandered off and got lost and ended up

asking for help from a Laundry Shop. They put me in the window as a lost boy and called the police. I was soon returned home. I think my Mum was horrified how far I had been.

Back Alley



Back Alley at 26 Fleet Street

I commenced my school days at “Clarks Field” Infants’ School. My brother Michael John was already attending and was in the third year when I started.

Clark’s Field Infants School



Clark’s Field Infants School (David bottom right)

I remember my first day at school in the classroom with other children. The ceilings were high and there were things like sand pits and black board easels and old fashion classroom desks and tables.

The girl next door, Vivian Butler, began school with me and I can remember her crying for her Mum. I remember not feeling the need to cry and I tried to comfort her and assure her all would be well.

My Auntie Edith was very good to us boys and we would visit her every Saturday. She lived with

my Granddad’s sister. She was called Auntie Alice. Auntie Edith would take us out to a great park in Oldham and on the way home we would call in at the chip shop. In those days chips were real chips, cooked in real fat. One of our favourite meals she would cook was potato pie, with red cabbage. In the house there was a cellar, which I always liked to visit. I think at one time washing was done in the cellar.

At that time my brother was probably the only close friend I had, although we were not too close. He was just there. We use to go swimming on a Saturday morning to the “Waterhead Baths”. This type of swimming baths was typical of the old-fashioned baths of the time. They were small, the water green, and walls tiled cream. At the side of the pool there were slipper baths where you could sit up to your chin in hot water and carbolic soap was supplied to wash with. It was very cozy. In fact the whole atmosphere was warm and cozy, not like the cold clinical swimming baths of modern times. Next-door was the washhouse where mum used to go at the same time to do washing.

One Saturday morning I nearly drowned and was saved by the attendant called Norman. I had tiptoed backwards and as the pool got slowly deeper and deeper I found I could not touch the bottom. It was through the providence of God that the attendant turned to see me reaching upwards out of the water. I couldn’t speak. He dived in to rescued me and I can still feel the fear today of nearly drowning.

Across the road from the swimming baths was a slaughterhouse, next door to inhabited houses. We were very curious and would look through the slatted windows and see the men kill the pigs, sheep and cattle. This was awesome and ghoulish and a fearful thing, but we were very curious and wanted to see how the men slew the animals. There was blood, animal intestines, animal heads bones and blood. The smell was awful and not pleasant at all, and it seemed as though the pigs knew they were going to be slaughtered, and their end was come. I have wondered about my brother since then, as he was two and a half years older than me and how this may have affected him. Later on in life he demonstrated a callous way, which was characteristic of killing without mercy just like these slaughter men.

About this time I remember coming home from school and in the dusk of that day the house seemed

unusually quiet. I noticed some blood on my brother’s book and my mum told me there had been an accident. My brother had fallen down a basement stairway shaft at school and landed on his back. He was concussed and I remember then feeling how precious life was. My brother could have died through the fall. It was awesome. I still had no recollection of God during this time.

Oldham

Oldham is a town in the north of England, not far from the city of Manchester, and during the 19th century was an industrial community famous for its cotton mills. In fact, my grandfather was a great supporter of the Trades Union.

As a child I remember the old mills, red brick built with huge chimneys towering high above the buildings. Also the water reservoirs, which we were always warned to stay away from. My mother had spoken about children being drowned in them and this was sufficient for me to obey her.

An Oldham Mill



Typical Old Mill Oldham

3 Garston Infant School

We moved from Oldham to Garston, Watford when I was 5 years old and my mum took me to my first day at school, which was at Garston Infant School. I was in the second year of the infants. My mum had arranged for me to walk home with a girl called Vivian who apparently lived in Coats Way where we lived. Not that I knew my address because I didn’t. All I knew was we had move to a place called Garston, so I assumed we lived in Garston Road.

When it came to walking home I had to follow Vivian, but she took me by a way I had never been before. A completely different way, and across a

GARSTON INFANT SCHOOL

park to what was the other end of Coats Way. She left me there and I had no Idea where I was, as I did not recognize anywhere at all. Feeling uneasy about all this I realized I was lost. So I made my way back towards the school and began to ask people where Garston Road was. There was no such place but I insisted I lived in Garston Road. A man with a red Bedford dormobile offered to take me back to school to find out where I live so off we went. The schoolteacher said I lived in Coats Way where Vivian had took me but I said I didn’t live there, as I could not recognize the place. The man took me back to Coats Way but I could not recognize where I lived. He drove from one end to the other. It was quite a long Way with a Council estate on one end and private houses at the other end. This was where I lived 149 Coats Way. I saw my Mum in the front garden - so I arrived home after being lost on my first day at school.

German Teacher

My classroom teacher was a German woman called Miss Kitchinger. She spoke with a German accent and I spoke with a broad Lancashire accent. We did not hit it off and I was hopeless at reading the flash cards. It seemed as though I was singled out and proved to be a dunce, as I could not really read. Being small I think I messed about to divert attention from my inability to do class work.

One day when I arrived at school I found a pair of pumps (they called them plimsolls now), which I later found out belonged to Vivian on my desk and I did not like them being there. Feeling rather indignant I place them in the dustbin. I think I might have asked the teacher, “please Miss, whose are these pumps?”, but was ignored, as she did not understand me, so in the bin they went.

The next day Vivian’s mother came to school wanting to find out where her plimsolls had gone. The caretaker said he had found them and placed them on my desk. When I was questioned I was in trouble and Miss Kitchinger said my mum would have to buy a new pair as I had thrown them away. I felt this unfair and felt really picked on. I know my mum came to the school and had an argument about the pumps and the fact that a German teacher was trying to teach English. This was only few years after the war with Germany had ended.

At that time my mum had to work late and it was arranged for me to wait in the classroom after school until my mum came to pick me up. This was shortly after the event with the plimsolls. The class had a pet hamster and this little creature got all the attention from every one. I was the one that got no attention but rather got into trouble. One evening whilst I was waiting in the classroom for my mum to collect me, the teacher left the classroom for a short while.

I went towards the hamster cage and thought to my self why do you get all the attention. I know what I am going to do with you. I took the hamster out to the cage and closed the door. I looked at the hamster in the in the eyes and went over to Vivian’s desk and put it inside, shutting the lid quickly thinking that will pay her back for getting me in trouble over her plimsolls. I sat back in my chair before the teacher returned and went home with my mum as though nothing had happened.

The next day I went into class as quiet as I could and keeping out of the way. I waited patiently for the eruptions. Then suddenly, Oh Miss, screamed Vivian, the hamster is in my desk. It had weeded and messed everywhere through out the night. Every one gathered around the desk to see at the same time. I felt very guilty. One boy tried to suggest the hamster had escaped and climbed up the table leg and got through the whole drilled for the spilled ink to drain. A good idea I thought so keep thinking that thought. Then some one asked how did it get out of the cage as the door was closed. I was feeling very, very guilty now and wondered if Miss Kitchinger was thinking had I done the deed the night before. I kept quiet and to this day they do not know how that hamster got there. During this time my brother was attending the Lea Farm Junior School, the school I was to attend the next year or so.

Congregational Sunday School

My mum use to take me to Sunday school from time to time and I didn’t mind going. One day (about 1958) on the way home from normal school I would walk past the Congregational church building, rather a modern building, and the vicar lived in a Gypsy stile caravan in the church grounds.



Congregational Church Building

The church building was always left open and we often went in the church building on the way home. I saw, on one occasion, some boys took the money out of the collection box, which too was left unlocked. I could not understand this. Why where things left unlocked for boys to steel from. One day after school I met the vicar when I was looking around the church building and I asked him why is the building left open and why it the collection box not locked. His reply puzzled me. He said the church should be always open for people because God was like that if people fell they need to steel the collection then they must need it badly. He did not feel the box should be locked. I was puzzled and said but why? The vicar was sure it was the right thing to do. That stayed with me to this day and people get angry some times with me for not locking up my house.

At this same church I can remember the Easter services. I had no Idea what the gospel was nor did I understand the Easter story.

I remember sitting in the pew during the Easter service listening to how they crucified Jesus wondering why Jesus did not come down from the cross. I felt he could have done so and confounded all them Pharisees, but why didn’t he do so. I knew the story about his death and resurrection but did not know what it all meant. I never did find out until 14 years later when I was 21 years old when I learned to read the bible for my self. It was then I learned that Jesus had to die to take away my sins. That he died in my place to set me free from sin, self and death.

It was about this time (1959) that my mum encouraged me to play the piano. My mum’s favourite artist was Perry Como and “Side Saddle” was a piece of mum’s favourite music, which I learned to play.

23

GARSTON INFANT SCHOOL

I had music lesson with a Miss Mary Lee, a music teacher in Garston and eventually I graduated with a merit Grade 1 (Primary) RSA in Pianoforte. This was July 1960.

The sort of music, which was popular in those days, was. “Yellow Polka Dot Bikini, My Old Man’s a dustman, by Lonnie Donnigan, Living Doll by Cliff Richards. Also the Hula-Hoop was a craze at that time.

Cecil The Sissy And Air Pistol

Living not too far away from us in Coates Way, was a boy who my brother nicknamed Cecil, as this sounded like a suitable name for a sissy. He was a cripple in the sense that his feet were curved inwards and he walked awkwardly. He must have been about 10 years old. My brother poked fun at him and I too soon followed suit. We would sing about him a song called Cecil, Cecil a Cecil feet. He would try and avoid us.

One day Cecil came on his bike down to the woods that we called the dell. We were playing up the trees and had made a catapult out off one of the great branches of the trees. One person would sit in the branch and two or three other kids would pull on the rope till the branch was fully bent. The rope would be released and the person would be catapulted up in the air. They would have to hold on tightly other wise they would end up in the trees.

On this day my brother had it in for Cecil. We took his bike and put it into the catapult making sure it was catapulted up into the trees. We thought this was great fun but Cecil did not.

His mother came to our house and complained to my mum about our bullying Cecil but my mum seemed to have no mercy. She said Cecil had got to learn to look after himself and he was a sissy. I felt mum was wrong as I knew how bad we were and my mum seemed to have no mercy. I felt bad however.

Shortly after this incident my brother encouraged me to take our newly acquired air pistol to school, and Cecil was the one who my brother bullied and threaten to shoot in the playground. On reflection my brother seemed to have no mercy at all. My brother must have been in the final year and I in the first year of Lea Farm Junior School.



David At Lea Farm Junior School

It wasn't long however before my air pistol was found and confiscated. After assembly one of the boys had taken it out of my desk and was running around the classroom with it when the teacher walked in. I was in trouble again with the Headmaster and this would have been another time I got the cane for bringing a dangerous weapon to school.

Wrexham Holiday

Michael and I must have been about 7 and 10 years old and Mum and dad had renovated an old Ford convertible car whose number plate was BBU.

Mum had bought the car whilst we were living in Oldham and dad was working in Watford. Dad had moved to Watford to get a job, and was living with his mum (our grandma at Ash Tree Road Garston, Watford). Mum and dad were able to buy a house at 149 Coats Way Garston and it was mum who decided to buy the car to get Michael and I down from Oldham to Watford.

It was this car that I often fell out of when the breaks were hit. It caused me to move forward and push open the door lock and the door opened the opposite way round. I would end up on the road outside the car. Dad eventually was able to put a safety chain on the handle to stop this happening.

Dad had rebuilt the engine and painted it black and green, Mum made a new convertible top using her sewing skills. It was a bit like Noddy's car it was really good.

In this car we went to Brixton for a holiday and it was there mum and dad bought Michael and I a fishing rod each. I had a wooden cane one and he had a metal rod. I remember I was always jealous of what

Chapter 3
he had as I always thought his things were better than mine.

Keen to try the rods out near the sea harbour Michael rushed to the waterside just around the corner and soon came back crying. He said a man had taken his rod and thrown it into the sea. Dad rushed around but no one could be seen. We looked for the man on his bike but no one was to be seen. It is only now that I look back that I believe Michael had quickly put the rod together pretended to fish by casting an imaginary line and the rod top had gone straight into the sea. He probably felt he would have been told off by our dad and be in trouble. So he invented a story about a man on a bike.

When I look back it is incidences like this that I learned about the way Michael thought and worked and in later life it made one wonders at the tales he told.

The Fair Ground, Stolen Bike

Every year the fair would come to Garston and I really looked forward to ride the dodgem cars. All the kids would go to the fair and spend lots of time watching. I can remember two brothers who worked on the fair and these were like heroes, and we would wonder who was the strongest and speculate which one could lift a dodgem car above his head. We would also listen to the latest pop music, which played through large loudspeakers. This was before any one had personal radios or cassette players. There was no Top of the Pops on TV. So the fair was the place to hear pop music.

I was probably about 11 or 12 years old, and this year I remember stealing £3 from my mum's purse. I felt very guilty and bad at the time and I still feel the shame as I write about it now, but this was spent on the fair. I am thankful for the truth that the blood of Jesus cleanses us from all sin. This became my only way of me dealing with my sin when I became a Christian and still is.

My brother at that time had a paper round and use to get up early each morning and so he began to earn his own money. I remember him obtaining all sorts of new things like writing cases, pens, pencils, ink cartridges, etc. all the little things one would like but could not afford. I soon realized that my brother was not buying them but stealing them from the shop where he worked.

On the odd occasion I would go and help him

Chapter 3
deliver the papers. I enjoyed this as it took me to places I had never been before.

On one occasion we had to deliver papers to a hospital or residential home, and around the back of the building we could see the kitchens and we helped our selves to the cakes, which had been freshly cooked. I learn from my brother how easy it was to get things I wanted.

I always looked up to my brother and often envied the things he did and had. I remember him going to Switzerland, with the school and him coming home with all kinds of goods. Like a walking stick, flick knives, and badges etc. Flick knives were illegal and to have a flick knife was a good thing.

My brother soon got in to bows and arrows, and air rifles and pistols swords and sheath knives, which seemed good to me. In fact we use to hide all these weapons under the floorboards in our shed, which was at the bottom of our garden.

At this time I remember my mum and dad buying me a new bike. It was a red Californian, with curved crossbars etc. I thought it was great and was ever so pleased with it. One day the bike went missing, and I knew some one had taken it, so I was very upset.

When I went out looking for it I noticed up the road an accident had taken place, as there were cars stopped and people milling around. To my horror I saw my nice new bike crumpled and just lying at the side of the road. The boy who had taken it had been knocked off the bike and was lying in the road awaiting an ambulance and every one was trying to take care of him.

I thought to my self never mind about him, as he had stolen my bike, but look at my new bike, all bent. I was very upset. No one however took any notice of me, neither were they concerned about my bike being damaged. The boy's name was Michael Abbes and we had been friends until recently and I seem to remember that he had broken his legs in the accident.

A Stolen Crystal Set

My interest in radio, which we now call electronics, started the day I heard a crystal set operate. I must have been 10 or 11 years old.

My mum and dad belonged to the Camping Club of Great Britain and every weekend we would go camping to Chertsey, where we had a tent pitched.

One weekend my brother stole a crystal set from a camper's tent. It consisted of a small tuning capacitor

25
in a blue plastic case and a crystal diode, together with a set of headphones. I was amazed as it worked and became interested in radio from that day forward.

Camping at Chertsey



Dad at Chertsey Camp-site Dad By Our Canoe

I sent away for a set of parts to build a two transistor reflex receiver, and put the thing together as best I could. I wired the circuit as I thought the diagram showed, and crushed it all together to fit inside its plastic case. It didn't work and I was most disappointed. I didn't realize that all the wires were shorted together when I crushed it into the plastic case. Another friend of mine's dad helped me out. He was a radio technician in the Royal Air force and he rebuilt the receiver and showed me how to wire circuits up. From that time I began to learn about how things worked and taught my self-many things with the help of others.

Another friend of mine had a dad who had a radio workshop and I was very envious of all the equipment that he had in his garage. I remember the boy being confident enough to take apart out of an old radio for me, without any sense of fear. I was quite impressed. I taught my self quite a lot and began to learn about transistors.

One day on the way home from school we climbed over the fence of someone's back garden and discovered a shed full of radio parts, and equipment. There were valves, tuning condensers, transformers etc., we took what we wanted and thought no more of it.

This hobby was to last me a long time and helped me to get a job in radio and television servicing and to Technical College at a later date. During this time I had no sense or knowledge of God and I had stopped going to Sunday school.

Stealing Radio Equipment

One day on the way home from school we

climbed over the fence of someone’s back garden and discovered a shed full of radio parts, and equipment. There were valves, tuning condensers, transformers etc., We took what we wanted and thought no more of it.

This hobby was to last me a long time and helped me to get a job in Radio and Television Servicing and to Technical College at a later date. During this time I had no sense or knowledge of God and I had stopped going to Sunday school.

A Visit From The Police

About this time I manage to break into a work man’s hut which was at the gravel pit situated on not to far from our home. Me along with other kid would play there during the evening and climb on top of the work man’s working shed. There were also two large tanks of hot water and we would after dangle our feet in the water and wash our selves after getting dirty. On this occasion we managed to break in the shed and I managed to steal a wireless receiver. It was a valve receiver in a wooden box. I took it to pieces and saved the chassis and had it in my bedroom at Coats Way. Some how the police were tipped off and they came and searched our house for the stolen goods. I was thankful I had got rid of the wooden cabinet as they found no evidence of the break in.

4 Senior Secondary Schools

My first senior school was in Garston, as I had failed the 11 plus. It was at this school I first heard a boy play a tune called , “Apache” by the Shadows, on an acoustic guitar and I was very impressed. Michael had already started at this school and did well at cricket, boxing and basketball. I was not good at any of these things but rather was interested in my radio hobby.

Michael and Boxing

I soon learned the my brother had a reputation at school as a boxer and I recall attending the school competition for sports and Michael won the boxing at that event. He would have been in the fourth year and about to leave school. On that occasion my uncle John and Dad were there and Uncle John after Michael’s win went and congratulated the looser, in order to keep him encouraged. Parents were like that in those days.



Michael In The Horizontal Striped Jumper

The Senior Clarke Brothers



Uncle John and my Dad Tom Clarke
My Visit to Soho

It was towards the end of my first year, at Francis Coombe Secondary modern school, that I ventured out to London on the train, with a friend of mine, Paul Dorrington. This was to visit the second hand electrical shops, to buy radio parts. I loved visiting Tottenham Court Road for this purpose and it was on one of these visits that we stumbled across Soho and noticed the strip clubs.

These aroused our curiosity. Paul and I plucked up courage and paid to go in and sit at a table. We could see a nude lady sitting on a chair and were given a sketchpad and pencil and encouraged to draw her picture. I felt I was growing up. Afterwards we paid one or two more visits and became wiser.

When we moved to Wilstone, a village near Tring in Hertfordshire, my radio and television hobby helped me pass the time and kept me out of too much trouble.

In 1961 we finally moved to Wilstone a village near Tring and Michael and I went to Tring Secondary modern school called Mortimer Hill. I can remember my brother wearing winkle picker shoes and some of the girls from the next village couldn’t help but say oh look at those shoes. They were just different and I suppose they felt threatened.

Michael at Tring School



Michael With His Friend Notice the Winkle
Picker Shoes

It was during this time that I taught myself more about Radio and amplifiers.

I became absorbed in this hobby. I met a man in the village called Cluck Turney, who was the man to know about televisions and radios and he gave me a lot of help. He taught me about valve amplifiers and allowed me to build a power amplifier, from all the spare parts that he had. It was a push pull amplifier using two PX4 valves and a triode driver. I had to rewind the driver and output transformers in order to get it working. I learned a lot from Cluck Turney.



Amplifier Using PX4 Valves

On one occasion I was able to connect a microphone up to my amplifier and I directed the speaker out of

my bedroom window and spoke to people out side our shop. On this occasion I saw a woman in her rear garden called Ethel. I called out with the amplifier as loud as possible saying Ethel, Ethel I am watching you. I heard many years later that she thought it sounded a bit like God speaking from the sky.

Keeping Myself Busy

To occupy myself I made things of interest. I made a kart with a large wind sale.



My Land Yacht

A pair of stilts and all the kids in the village wanted a pair. On one occasion I made an electric shock machine from an ignition coil a battery and a mechanical vibrating mechanism used in an electric bell. I tested it out on the kids in the village by getting them to hold hands, in a circle and one kid at each end of the circle held the electrode.

When I switched the machine on they all got a sharp electric shock. It was a success.

Keeping Busy



Electric Shock Machine

I later had a visit from the local policeman as I had stolen a 12-bore shotgun from an old barn and brought it home. When I showed it to my next-door neighbour he recognised the gun and realised who it belonged too and so he informed the local policeman to get it returned to its owner.

David estimates it will do 20 miles and hour.

Incidentally David, who has lived in the town for only a month has very little real interest in engines. His main hobby is in radio construction work and one of his proudest possessions is a transistor radio, which he built that is slightly larger than a matchbox.

I Steel Push Bikes

It was during this space of time, before starting my new school; I met another lad called Ian Motrem. We encouraged each other to steel push bikes. In fact the first day that I went to school I stole a bike to come home from school.

I eventually got a Francis Barnet 150 CC motorbike, which my brother had stolen from Aylesbury College, with some other lads. I kept this in a field on the Bedgrove Estate near our home. It was great fun to have a motorbike and I would ride across the fields to school and return home during my lunch hour. However one day some one stole my motorbike and Ian Motrem informed me that he thought he knew the person that had taken it. I went to this person's house early one morning, during my paper round, and found a motorbike in his garage. This wasn't my bike but I took it anyway. This ended up in me being charge with garage breaking and being put on probation for two years.

Stolen Francis Barnett 150 CC Motor Bike



My Francis Barnett Motor Bike

I Meet Mrs Grace Knight

My teenage years leaving School

My first recollection of any religious person having any effect on my life was when I was about to leave school, at the age of 15 years old.

My mother had spoken to a Mr K H Knight who was the proprietor of Central Bucks T.V. and had arranged for me to have a part time job working after school and on a Saturday. This was until I left school and took up full time work as an apprentice to Mr Knight.

I am told years later that my letter of job application was so badly written and the spelling so awful it was laughable. However I was taken on despite my inability to write, spell or use correct grammar, or read properly. This was during my last year at school.

I first met Mrs Grace Knight, one Saturday morning, whilst working for her husband Ken. She was in hot pursuit of her husband and shouting at him for doing some thing she disapproved of.

I was in the workshop, with Norman Garret the other apprentice, and I thought- wow what an awful dragon of a woman and pitied Mr Knight from that moment on.

Through Mr Knight (Ken) I was introduced to the Radio and Television servicing trade and often went with him into customer's houses to repair TV's and install television aerials.

I spent many hours with Ken going to peoples homes and soon learned that he was not faithful to his wife. Not that it bothered me, as I knew what Grace was like from our first meeting. The idea of sexual promiscuity was very attractive to me. When we went out enjoying our selves Mrs Knight would be left at home or in the workshop minding their two children Allison and Mark. They also had a big dog called Rufus.

By this time I had left school and was interested in our band, as we wanted to make music. Ian Myers was the bass guitarist and he built his own guitar amplifier from a circuit design and published in Practical Wireless. He built the amplifier I helped him with the speaker cabinet and it was used in all our future gigs.

I soon began to realize the things I enjoyed were not the things Mrs Knight approved of, or found interesting. I thought she was a right "kill joy" and was boring. She was a Christian what ever that meant and I soon realize her values were not the same as mine. What I considered good and enjoyable she would call it sin and sinful. She would also complain to her husband that I was always with him and he gave her no time. It seemed she was often driven to despair by him never being in on time and being very

unreliable. He would often leave her for hours whilst we were at work out on jobs.

Conversation On The Intercom

On one occasion Norman Garret's mum complained to Mrs Knight the Norman her son, was not getting the training he needed because Ken was always taking me out with him. I heard this conversation over the shops intercom. Mrs Knight said yes I was a nuisance and she did not like me one bit and it was not good that I should be out with her husband all the time. Upon hearing this I felt angry and went down the stairs to where they were and confronted them both saying that I had heard what they had said about me. They were embarrassed and I am sure this did not help our relationship. I really thought Mrs Knight was an ogre.

I began to attend Luton College of Technology, to learn about Radio and Television Servicing, and travelled by bus, one day a week, from Aylesbury to Luton; it was about an hour's and a half's run. I think it must have been due to Mrs Knight and her religion that I began to notice the texts of scripture put up out side churches as I past by on the bus, they were called "Way side pulpits". I began to memorize the verses such as:

" Righteousness exalteth a nation but sin is a reproach to any people"

And also another:

" Jesus said if you find life difficult learn of me and the burden I shall give you will not be too difficult to carry".

At that time I had no idea of the meaning of these texts of scripture but found it amusing to quote them to Mrs Knight at any in appropriate moment thinking it would embarrass her.

On one occasion I remember being dressed in an old blanket made into an undercoat from my brothers Mod anorak. I was standing on the corner of the street near to the workshop one Saturday morning with Mr and Mrs Knight. I quoted at the top of my voice these two scriptures in order to embarrass Mrs Knight. I am not sure how they felt about it but little did I know that one day I would learn the truth of these texts and become a preacher of the Gospel myself.

Mrs Grace Knight became a great help to me and lived until 2001. Here is a link to a video of her funeral.

(Click to view)

[Obituary Grace Maude Knight](#)



David's Do It Your Self Kart 1963

An Aylesbury boy was able to return to school after the Easter holidays and proudly tell his friends, " I've made a Go Cart in the holidays." He is 14 years old,

On Sunday of last week a friend gave David (pictured above) and old moped. As he was unable to ride it he as he is too young he dismantled it. He then made a Kart frame from some pieces of wood, four old wheels and a set of handlebars and the moped engine.

My NSU Quickly Moped



My Moped

Within three days it was in working condition and

A Confident 15 year old

I enjoyed working for Mr Knight because he seemed to appreciate my help and abilities and would trust me to drive the van at 15 years old. On one occasion he was short of a driver and had to deliver a television. So he dressed me up in a sheepskin coat and gave me dark glasses to wear with instructions to deliver a TV to a house in Quarendon. I was very pleased to do this even more when it turned out that I was delivering the TV set to one of my school friends called Gillespie.

On another occasion I was given the job of replacing a complete I.F. board on a new Ferguson 850 T.V. receiver in a customers home. A qualified engineer in a workshop setting normally would have done this but this unconventional approach was normal to me. Mr Knight had complete confidence in me at the age of 15 years old. I am sure the customer was not at all happy at this 15 year old repairing their lovely brand new Television receiver.

During this time I was still making music in the group and when I was 16 Mr Knight's business failed and went into liquidation so I found myself another job. I got an apprenticeship with Sale and Mellor at Radio a TV shop in Aylesbury. I worked there until I got in trouble with the police when I was sacked at the age of 17 years.

Stolen BSA Bantem



BSA Bantem 125 CC Motor Bike

It was shortly after this time that I got into trouble with the police for breaking into a garage and stealing a motorbike. I had a Francis Barnett 150 CC, which had been stolen from the field where I kept it and a friend of mine told me that it was in this garage, along the Tring Road. At first I was just interested in getting

my bike back but when I opened the garage door I was disappointed not to find it - just a 125 BSA Bantam.

I thought well its better than nothing so I decided to take it any way and wheeled it out of the garage and back to our field, to use it later. The police later caught me and for this first crime I was charged with garage breaking and put on probation for two years.

A Holiday in Newquay

At this time Mum and Dad took me and my sister Margaret , who was about 3 years old, to Newquay for a holiday. I didn't know what kind of place it was but when we got there it was great. The sand the sea and the surfing and views were a treat to see. It was here that I conducted my first blag (a scheme or scam) as I wanted to explore the Headland Hotel, which was an impressive hotel.

The Headlands Hotel

Anyway on this occasion I took Margaret by the hand and we walked down the drive right into the hotel. As we approached a steward of some kind came up to me and asked if he could help. I confidentially replied no thank we are staying here. He stood upright, in embarrassment and said, oh yes I remember the little girl. So we blagged it and I wondered around the hotel with my 3 year old sister, admiring the hotel.

The Hotel Where The Witches Was Filmed



The Headlands Hotel Newquay

My brother and I were to returned to Newquay for a holiday in 1967 just before we were both sent to prison.

8 Our Rock Group

It was after this that decided I wanted to play the electric guitar and I remember a lad called Alan Lawrence, from Tring Secondary Modern School,

having an electric guitar and bringing it to school. He plugged it into the schools record player and it sounded great. I wanted to learn to play like him. The first guitar I owned was an electric Hofner Futurama Two and a friend called Steve showed me how to play Twist and Shout and it was this that got me really interested to play properly.

Steal An Amplifier Catholic Church

I put together my own guitar amplifier using the P.A. amplifier that I had stolen from the Catholic Church on the North Orbital Road in Watford. It didn't bother me even when my conscience spoke to me about it being wrong to steal as I believed the Catholics were wrong anyway according to my mum.

My First Guitar Stolen Amplifier



Liner Conchord 30 Amplifier

Top View using EL34 Output valves in push pull

Underneath the Chassis



Hand Wired Main Chassis

(I had inherited a prejudice against the Catholic Church, from my mum, and so when I took the

amplifier I ignored my conscience by saying to myself they were wrong any way).

I then began to get more interested in making music and during my last year at school we formed a band and we played at the end of term school dance. Our Gym teacher, Mr Pottinger, organized this event.

The Fowler Mean our Rock Group

Ian Myers was the base guitarist and later Robby Woods became our lead guitarist. On that occasion though, at the school do, Willie Barrett was lead guitarist. He was the only one of us to make musical fame. He became known as Wild Willy Barrett and played music with John Otway.

A Secret

Willy Barrett's dad was a brilliant man, a musician and a craftsman, he made an excellent bass guitar for either Willy or his friend. He wanted an amplifier for Willie's electric guitar and the bass player friend said he had a 30 Watt Linear Concord amplifier for sale, for a small amount of money and I jumped in quickly before they made their mind up and bought it from this man. This is the one in my picture.

How ever I then agreed to sell my 15 Watt linear Concord amplifier that I had stolen from the Catholic Church, in North Watford to his dad for a little bit less money and they bought it of me. I was very pleased but felt a bit guilty because they got a rough deal and really they should have had the 30 Watt amplifier which was much better than mine. Little did they know I had stolen the amplifier.

Wild Willy Barrett



Wild Willy Barrett



The Kinks, Ottis Reading and John Lee Hooker. We played, “My Generation”, but I knew it was not quite right and I never did find out how to play the right cords to this day. The opening chords we played were four down strokes on G followed by four downward strokes on F but that is not right. I always thought if ever I met Pete I would ask him to show me how to play those opening chords. I really enjoyed playing with the band but was eventually sacked and it was then that Malcolm Kirkham and I began to knock around with each other.

The Fowler Mean



Dave Clarke (left) with Robby Woods (top) Ian Myers

Wild Willy Barrett and John Otway My Vox A.C. 30 Amplifier



My Vox AC 30 (Cost Second hand £60)

I had a new amplifier that was a Vox AC 30. and replaced the amplifier that I had stolen from the Catholic Church. One of our regular spots, on a Saturday night, was Courts Dance School, just off Kingsbury Square. Here is our music play set:

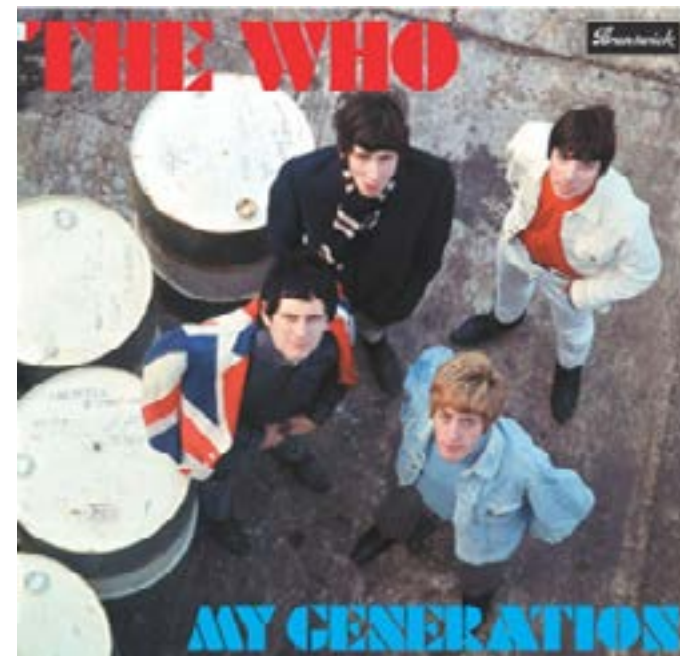
[The Fowler Mean \(Play Set\) Click to view and listen](#)

After leaving school we reformed the group and began to play music at various dance halls and I named the group “The Fowler Mean”.

We often played at Courts School of dancing in George Street in Aylesbury and other venues in Aylesbury. In Tring and the Bulls Head and the Anthony Hall in Aston Clinton. One of the other bands we played with was The Must Be Blue with the organist Pat Archer.

We would play all cover music by groups such as, The Rolling Stones, The Who, The Small Faces,

Our Favorite Band The Who



John Entwistle, Pete Townsend, Keith Moon, Roger Daultary

My favourite band was The Who. This group introduced something to music that was new. It was volume. My Generation was the real hit that made the Who. I can remember hearing them, at the Grosvenor Dance Hall, in Aylesbury. Pete Townsend was the lead guitar, John Entwistle on bass, Keith Moon on drums and Roger Daultary lead singer. There was not a band to touch them they were brilliant. We saw them on a number of occasions including places like Borehamwood and the Bedford Corn Exchange.

I remember their amplifier line up (being interest in amplifiers) Pet Townsend had:

Pete Townshend Amplifier line Up



Two A.C. 100 Amplifiers in Parallel

John Entwistle Amplifier line up



4 X A.C. 60 watt Vox Bass

Amplifiers and their PA system was Vox columns and Shure microphones.

The volume added another dimension to the experience. I call it Rock and Real Music, It added depth to the sound and none of us had experienced anything like it before

These were all classic Who numbers and none forgettable pieces of music

Malcolm Kirkham use to be one of our singers which made 5 in the band and we use to go out together on our scooters. I had inherited my brother's Lambretta TV 175 CC and Malcolm had a 150 CC new Lambretta and we began to mix with the Mods in Aylesbury and district.

He had been sacked from the group because he messed about. Malcolm would always arrive late and never be in time to set up the equipment. He was always combing his hair or having to press his trousers, and he general fooled around. He was nicknames Cocoa the clown.

After mixing with the other lads in Aylesbury I soon found out my brother was well known and when it was made known I was Mike Clarke's brother it was like having a license to or say any thing, I was accepted. I was one of the boys. I recalled the times my brother had told me of the parties they use to have and I began to want to get involved in all the fun. Pep pills, scooters, Mod fashions, dances, girls and permissive sex. All of which I found positive and attractive as we were looking for a good time in the world.

The image I had of my brother was that he was quite a character and had a way with girls. I remember that was how I wanted to be and follow him in fame.

I remember one impressive occasion I must have been just 16 and met one of Michael’s friends who was a Mod. One Saturday night out side the Grosvenor he came dressed in brightly coloured trousers and a black plastic mac wearing girls make up around the eyes. This was the in thing to do and I thought this is good and liked it.

The normal mode of transport was either a Lambretta or Vespa scooter with crash bars, back rests, spare wheel carriers and mirrors. The scooters would be custom sprayed and generally a world war green Parker or black plastic cape was the uniform. All of this became the world I wanted to be in.

Oxford Bags

I remember my brother coming to see us at Rockley Sands, in Bournemouth when I was away with my parents on holiday. I must have been 15 years old. He came dressed in a brown suit with 22 inch, Oxford Bag trousers, with small turn-ups. His top was a white crew necked and red stripped tea shirt. Also brown brogue leather shoes. This was some fashion that I had not seen before. It was the Mod fashion.

He told me he had to return to Aylesbury to do some repairs and tidy up mum and dads house as they had a party and the place had been wrecked. Apparently all the Aylesbury Mods and from the district had been to his party held at Mum and Dads house. They had rolled up the carpets and put them in the garage but the bathroom sink had been pulled off the wall as some girl had got drunk and sat in it. He told me of the promiscuity and it all seemed good fun. This was the year 1963 or 4 when the Beatles and Rolling Stone came to fame. Also Gerry and the Pacemakers had a hit records at the time called, “I Like it”.

My First Girl Friend

I met Susan, at a Friday night dance being organized at the Aylesbury College; she was 15 years old and looked great. She had blond hair in a Bob style. I was 16, wearing my navy blue Mod suit. I had arrived on my Lambretta.

I asked her to dance and later asked if I could take her home. I was feeling great when she agreed and so I covered up my learner plate, which was just under the rear, number plate and took her home. This was the beginning of my first love. The relationship only lasted a few months. When she told me she wanted to finish the relationship I was heart broken and she

sought to encourage me by saying I would find some one else. I never did and had no interest in finding any one else. My only interest in girls after that was for sex alone- not friendship or anything else.

Another Who song that expressed my emotions at that time and I first heard this at Borehamwood.

The Mod Image



Lambretta Scooter Blond Girl Friend Sue

During this time Malcolm and I mixed with the Mods in Aylesbury we were both 16 years old and we began to meet with these older lads and were curious to try pep pills (purple hearts, black bombers and Dexedrine) and smoke hashish, or grass, so we began to make some inquiries where to get some. In the mean time we would experiment smoking crushed codeine tablets and dried banana skins. This was purely to satisfy a curiosity and to experience new things. The was a pub in Aylesbury called the, “Flee Pit” situated in Kingsbury Square and it was there we understood we could buy hash. However at 16 years old I went in this pub and became very embarrassed as on the wall behind the bar were displayed ladies knickers in various styles and colours. I felt embarrassed because the sight aroused me as at that time there was very little pornography and the sight of a woman in a short skirt and legs was very provocative for a 16 year old, On reflection I had a very high libido. Which led to a very promiscuous life style.

Carknapping (Steeling Cars)

Shortly after this I remember my brother coming home about 9.30 pm in a hurry. He had not long been released from Detention Centre. Our parents were away and I had a girl friend there. In came my brother and told me of his narrow escape from the police. About six of his friends had been out in a stolen car, not taxed or insured, when the police had stopped them along the Tring Road. They had all jumped out and made a run for it. It was soon after this that my

brother got sent to Borstal Training for some crime or other. Never the less it all seemed a good life style and I wanted more of it.

I had discovered I could buy chloroform from a chemist and this was much better than sniffing carbon Tetrachloride or the glue substances people began to experiment with. Shortly after this Malcolm Kirkham, after trying something like, this took it in his head that he could fly on his scooter. He broke his arm and smashed his scooter in the process but fortunately not his head as he was wearing a dear stalker crash helmet he had stolen a few days before.

The names of some of the lads we knew and come to mind were: Stuart Knight, Keith Guntrip, Ian Wilton, Dill Dorwick, and Terry Tatem (Now dead), Phil Davis, Brian Collier, Mickey Coil, Roy Miles, John James, Dave King, Jimmy Findlay, Phil Davis, and the like all of which had one thing in common. They wanted fun and were the lads of Aylesbury. (Time of writing this is the year year 2000).

My Lambretta Scooter



Lambretta TV 175 CC

At that time after being sacked from the group we began going to a nightclub called the Banbury Gaff. Here we would stay up all night taking pep pills (we use to say getting blocked) dancing and talking and in the morning end up in a cafe eating toast before driving back to Aylesbury. Soon after this Malcolm began to mix with the lads from Oxford and he was later sentence to some time in prison, for some crime or other. During this time my brother was in Borstal and at the Gaff I met Alan Dodd. He was my brother’s partner in crime and had escaped from Borstal and was living on a barge in Oxford. He told me at the time he had a gun and all this type of living impressed

me as it seemed rather exciting. We would spend time at the Gaff talking with other lads about the crimes we had done and planned various schemes and bragged and boasted about things we had done.

From this experience of mine I can say that there is no prevention or cure from this kind of criminal mind set. Once on that route you are on the road to serious crime, as all that I knew at that time will confirm. I can also say that a girl friend could really help some one like that avoid getting into too much crime.

The Great Train Robbery

It wasn’t long after the Great Train Robbery that we were finding our feet as criminals.

Bridgo Bridge



The Scene of the Robbery 1963

The great train robbery had taken place on August 8, 1963 at the Bridgo Bridge in Linslaid, just up the road from us in Aylesbury. The thieves laid an ambush for the mail train running from Glasgow to Euston and stole more than £2 million. For 125 years, the train had run uninterrupted until that night, when it was stopped by a red light in Buckinghamshire. Bruce Reynolds who crafted the robbery, was caught in 1969 and sentenced to 10 years in jail.

We were very impressed at this crime.

The Kray Twins

In the 1960’s, the Ronnie and Regie Kray were seen as prosperous and charming celebrity nightclub owners and were part of the Swinging London scene. A large part of their fame was due to their non-criminal activities as popular figures on the celebrity circuit, being photographed by David Bailey on more than one occasion; and socializing with lords, MP’s, socialites and show business characters such as the actors George Raft, Judy Garland, Diana Dors,

Barbara Windsor and singer Frank Sinatra.

“They were the best years of our lives. They called them the swinging sixties. The Beatles and the Rolling Stones were rulers of pop music, Carnaby Street ruled the fashion world... and me and my brother ruled London. We were fucking untouchable...” – Ronnie Kray, in his autobiographical book, My Story.

The Twins



Ronnie and Reggie Kray

Kray's Imprisonment

On 8 May 1968, the Kray's and 15 other members of their firm were arrested. Many witnesses came forward now that the Kray's' reign of intimidation was over, and it was relatively easy to gain a conviction.

The Kray's and 14 others were convicted, with one member of the firm being acquitted. One of the firm members that provided a lot of the information to the police was arrested yet only for a short period.

Out of the 17 official firm members, 16 were arrested and convicted.

The twins' defence, under their counsel John Platts-mills, QC, consisted of flat denials of all charges and the discrediting of witnesses by pointing out their criminal past. The judge, Mr Justice Melford Stevenson said: “In my view, society has earned a rest from your activities.” Both were sentenced to life imprisonment, with a non-parole period of 30 years for the murders of Cornell and Mcvitie, the longest sentences ever passed at the Old Bailey, (Central Criminal Court, London) for murder. Their brother Charlie was jailed for 10 years for his part in the murders.

Mods Scooters, Bikes Bubble Car

Shortly after my brother came out of Borstal a form of transport was required for two. A solution to this came through my brother who persuaded me to swap my scooter for a two-seater, Issetta 350 cc bubble car.

I had inherited the scooter from my Michael when he was sent to Borstal but by now it had been renovated. I had rebuilt it in the spare bedroom at home and re sprayed it British racing Green. It was a Lambretta T.V. 175 cc. The fuel tank and tool compartment was stove enamelled gold. It had a dual seat with a passenger back rest with very little extras. There had been crazes whereby crash bars, wing mirrors, wheel racks and anything made of chrome were generally attached to such machines, but not mine. I was proud of this Lambretta. It had to go to make way for the sky blue Bubble Car.

Pete Townshend Gives Us A lift

Before this time we had to thumb lifts, to get to where we wanted too if the scooter was out of action. On one occasion we were keen to get to Bedford, as The Who were playing at the Corn Exchange. We were dressed in our Mod mohair suits and carried a small suitcase with our night things in. We got as far as Ampthill and were stuck at the corner of the Ampthill to Bedford road and were about 20 miles from Bedford. We were stuck and Michael went into a pub to get a drink whilst I stayed on the corner trying to thumb a lift. as my brother needed a lift as well. To my relief and just after Michael had gone to the pub, a two seater red coupe Jaguar pulled up to offer me a lift. I rushed up to the window of the car, carrying our small suit case, feeling very relieved that I had a lift, but at the same time anxious as my brother was still in the pub. I said to the driver cheekily would he mind waiting a minute, The driver was fine and said OK. However to my surprise and amazement I realized whom the driver was it was Pete Townsend, the lead guitarist of The Who. Of course that made our day. By this Time Michael had arrived and we both squeeze into the front seat of Pete's Jaguar. We told him who we were and that we were off to Bedford to their gig at the Corn Exchange.

You can imagine listening to this song driving Pete's Car.

As we drove into Bedford we stopped and Pete asked me to ask some girls the directions to where The Who were playing. Sure enough they knew and pointed us in the direction of the Corn Exchange. It was a great evening.

Pete Townshend's Jaguar



Pete Townshend MK1 Jaguar

9 The Bubble Car

The bubble car belonged to David Ness of Chiltern avenue in Aylesbury, who had been given it by his brother. There was only one thing wrong with it. We had to bump start it as the starter motor did not work. (Push it and the put it in gear and jump in once the engine had started).



Front Loader 300 BMW Issetta Bubble Car

In this vehicle we had many adventures because we were liberated from the two- wheeled scooter and could cram four people in this vehicle, if we wanted. Neither of us had passed our driving test to drive a normal car but I had past my test to drive a motorbike and my license allowed me to drive the three-wheeler bubble car. We were able to carry blankets spare clothing etc. all in the dry. We carried all that we needed for a night out in that case. It was ideal for catching girls. The front opened up and it could be driven with the front door open. All we did was drive up to the bird we wanted to catch and stop in front of

her. Open up the door and drive forward. She had no option but to fall in and we would drive off with her in the car. It was questioned was any girl safe with us around.

Dr Clarke's Case

Whilst Michael was in Borstal, he had made for me a wooden case, like a brief case, that he had written on the side, Dr Clarke. This was for a bit of fun. However I carried, in that case, a bottle of Chloroform, whiskey and a fake gun (it was a starter pistol that fired blanks and looked real). We used the case to frighten people , as they soon learned what was inside the case.



Dr Clarke Case

On one occasion we went into the Crombie shop, just off Kingsbury Square intending to frighten the manager of the shop.

What had happened was that I had a blue mohair navy suit made to measure by him . How ever the jacket did not fit right and even after many alterations it did not fit properly. This was whilst Michael was in Borstal. So on Michael's release, and him hearing about the suit, we decided to go an get our own back and frighten the manager to pieces. He was about 21 years old and we were younger. So we went into the shop and put Dr Clarke's case on the counter and proceeded to get the chloroform out of the case intending to put the manager to sleep. We had no other intentions but simply to frighten him. When he realised what was about to take place, he was terrified and I had to stop Michael from knocking him out with the Chloroform. On one occasion we set off to Margate, on one Bank holiday. This was a custom amongst our generation of Mods. We all seemed to migrate to Yarmouth, Margate or Brighton. This was Whitsun bank holiday.

Off To Margate

1966 and Mod and Rocker riots were common. On this trip to the coast my brother was true to form he had borrowed a 22 Webley air pistol from Pat Jones and was determined to have a good time. He had fired the occasional pop shot at one or two girl’s bottoms, which cause many amusements to us all. This was not what I would have normally done because I remember how shocked I was at 11 years old a boy I recalled boys having air gun fights in the woods on the way home from school. I thought then how dangerous and stupid it was. However her was my brother older than I acting fearlessly. I just went along with it suppressing my natural cautiousness.

As we past through the various towns in London the air pistol was used to cause alarm. (As I write I shrivel up at the thought of what was done) We found it amusing to shoot at ladies bottoms as their reactions of shock was funny. As we passed through Lewisham several people must have reported the mystery air gun shooter and at least one lady was wounded.

Caught By The Police

Traffic police on route to Margate stopped us. These men briefly searched our car but found nothing suspicious and let us go. My brother had hidden the pistol just in time and we did not allow this close shave stop our adventure. Persons (girls) bathing at night were targets for our folly and we found it amusing to see and her scream from a female. It was not intended to wound or harm but that really was inevitable.

Our BMW Bubble Car



300 CC Bubble Car

During this weekend we moved on to Ramsgate and again moved with a spirit of naughtiness decided

to steel a tray of peaches from a fruit and vegetable shop. The bubble car was to be used as the get away car. The shop was half way down a hill with houses on either side of the road, it was decided I should take the peaches and my brother to drive the get away car. I lifted the tray of peaches and jumped in the car as it rolled down the hill making a chug, chug, noise-attracting attention. Naturally we were spotted and reports were made to the police but we did not know this.

Our foolishness was brought to an end when the same traffic police that had stopped us in London, on the way home, picked us up. I could tell from their faces that they had it in for us.

A quick search of our vehicle revealed a stolen handbag. If only we had got rid of it, I thought. Then the air gun pellets and finally the air gun itself. That was it we were arrested, the policemen having a snarl on his face and almost laughing as us. We were charge with malicious wounding and two cases of stealing. A woman in Lewisham had been travelling in a side car and been hit in the neck by the air pistol by my brother.

I was granted bail but my brother detained in custody. We had decided that I would say I had done the shooting and my brother was a sleep. This was to get my brother off a prison sentence as he had already done two spells in Detention Centres and two years in Borstal. I had only had a probation order and had an apprenticeship. I thought I would only get a fine but I was wrong.

Our Mum managed to obtain bail for my brother and we appeared in Kent Quarter sessions several months later.

On recollection I can remember a prison officer, at the Rochester Borstal, where I had visited my brother a year previously, had said to me that I would be sent to Borstal if I didn’t watch out. I said. “You must be joking”. I was sent to Borstal just as he said I would be for confessing to this crime. We were charged with malicious wounding.

On reflection I think my brother was not being a good brother to me. He should not have let me do it.

Bubble Car Blows Up

During the time we were awaiting our court appearance we went one night to Bedford in the bubble car. On the way home the bobble car caught light and blew up as the petrol tank was above the

engine. We managed to walk to Woburn Green and decided we would have to sleep the night there. After routing through some ones garage we found an old mattress and blankets and there was a newly piled mound of grass on the village green. This was where we made our bed and it was very comfortable. We put up our umbrella that we had rescued from the bubble car and slept soundly until the morning. The police, who wanted to know what we were doing - as if they could not see, waked us up. When we explained the bubble car had blown up they said oh yes they had seen it up the road. So they let us go without any further questions. I arrived at work that morning but was soon to be dismissed because I was due to appear in court and they were not prepared to trust me any more. This was the last of the bubble car as my parents managed to sell it when we were in prison.

I Get The Sack

Once my boss Mr Sale found out I had been caught by the police he gave me the sack and so I had no job and was about to appear in court on charges of malicious wounding and carrying a fire arm without a license. So in revenge I had a plan. I knew where the money and the takings of the shop were stored over night.

Plan A Break In

So shortly after this I instructed my apprentice, Pat Jones, to break into the shop where I used to work and had been given the sack, and he was to take the money.

The Shop



Shop Front High Street

The Break In

His task was to climb on top of the garage roof,

lift the tiles off the roof of the shop and break through into the loft, and then the ceiling. Go into the rear toilet and take the money. A great plan so we thought Then only trouble was that the money bag had not been placed in the spot that I instructed Pat to go to. So he did the job, did not get caught but we got no money..



Sale And Mellor Shop Rear

The Fire Arm



The Offending Weapon

9 Canterbury Prison

When my brother appeared in the Kent Quarter Sessions court I pleaded guilty to the charges of malicious wounding and carrying a fire arm without a license and my brother pleaded not guilty on all accounts.

I was sentenced to Borstal Training, which meant I could do any time between 6 months to two years. That would depend on me to some degree on how I behaved.

Canterbury Prison together

My brother was detained in custody until he appeared in court a month later during, which time we were both detained in. Our time in Canterbury

Prison was in one sense a time of continuous fun and just another of our good times together, even though I had just received an awful sentence. Upon arrival at Canterbury Prison we were taken into the reception hall. Here we were with other newly sentenced young persons and being with my brother made it that much easier for me, and it gave me confidence because he had been to Rochester Borstal, and Detention Centre on two occasions, before and he knew the ropes. Canterbury Prison

Canterbury Prison in Kent

This housed young persons who must have been typical of the criminal population of England at the time. In this prison we shared our experiences with others who had been sentenced to three, four and six months, and many had already been to approved schools, detention centers and Borstal before. Some were on their second or even third visit to prison. There was an element of excitement and curiosity about what made people like they were?

In the reception hall we were issued with prison clothing. Our fingerprints were taken and photographed and we were each given a number. After this the medical officer (all prison officers were called screws) had inspected us and we were taken to our cell (called a Peter). At that time we were three’s up. My brother and I and a lad from Liverpool. In this cell we were to remain for a few days until we were issued work. The cell was approximately 12 foot by 9 foot and housed a bunk bed and a single bed. A table, chair, water jug and urinal pot.

Canterbury Prison



Canterbury Prison Gates

At half past six each morning our sleep was broken with a bang on the door and words saying “Slop out”. This meant we had to get up make up our beds and empty the urinal pot. We then could get hot water for a wash in a jug for a shave and return to our cell. A

razor blade was issued and collected after and then we were banged up until breakfast.

At breakfast time we were unlocked and had to line up in single file to collect our food. This was served up on a specially shaped metal tray, which was recessed in three places to retain the food.

A typical breakfast would be a scoop of porridge, four slices of bread, a knob of margarine, a sausage or piece of bacon with beans and a large mug of tea.

The bread dipped in porridge became one of my favorite meals but on one occasion this practice of dipping bread in my porridge offended one inmate (when I was in Dover Borstal) he expressed he thought what I was doing was a disgusting habit. I just ignored him with contempt.

One of the ways we past time, when locked up in the cell, was to play “Blind Mans Buff”. One of us would be blindfolded whilst the other two crept about and hid from the other, while the blind man tried to catch the others. There were all sorts of places to hide in such a small cell. We enjoyed this game we would jump from bed to bed which made the game that much more fun.

During this time I found time killing boring so I tried to read one ore two books. The books I found I could read were James Bond as these were about my level and the Beano and Dandy comics. Any other reading would be too difficult to me.

On the days we were not working, each morning and afternoon was exercise. This was where all the inmates walked as a body around the prison yard. No doubt each prisoner looked at the high walls and every building looking for a possible way to escape. During this time we could talk with whom we pleased, those that attempted an escape were made to wear yellow patches so they could be spotted easily. These times became a time of communication and formed the prison grape vine

Hair Style Change

On one occasion I decided to change my hairstyle. So during the wash period my brother removed the safety edge from the Government Issue razor and was able to shave my head. It was much easier to wash in the mornings with no hair and much fresher. However I had gone against the prison rules and was put on a Governors report and put in solitary confinement for a period of time.

At the meal time it cause an amusing stir and I

was to get laughed at when one of the cooks slapped a handful of strawberry jam on my bald head. After this when my hair grew a little I was able to razor a parting in my hair which was really the beginning of the hair fashions for the skin head.

What Sentence Have You Got?

I could not help but notice the various characters and the first points of conversation were “What sentence had you got and what was your crime, or crimes”. After this an inquiry would be made as to your previous convictions and prison sentencing.

Our time at Canterbury came to and end when my brother was found guilty and was sentence to two years prison at the Kent Crown Court.

I was a witness at his trial and was detained in the cells below the courtroom. When my brother was brought below, handcuffed to a prison officer, I was shocked and disappointed that he had been found guilty. In fact all our plans had come to nothing and I was to do a stretch in Borstal. He was found guilty of malicious wounding as well and was sentenced to 2-year prison.

On that occasion my mother was not allowed to see either of us and we were taken from the cells in Kent back to Canterbury prison that dark wet night. As we approached the prison gate I saw my mum with tears in her eyes out side the prison gate. We both waved and motioned to the prison officer to say she had come to see us and his reaction was, “So what, she can’t see you because you are now prisoners”. She had not got a visiting permit. She had travelled from Kent to Canterbury late that night to try and see us but she was rejected.

From that time we hated that prison officer called Titmouse. He was about 6 foot 7 inches tall. My brother, weeks later, after we were separated laid into this screw because of the hate. He head-butted him (nuttred) and of course was on a governor’s report and put in solitary confinement. This I heard through the grape vine when I was at Wormwood scrubs awaiting my allocation to Dover Borstal.

Wormwood Scrubs

I was moved from Canterbury Prison to Wormwood Scrubs in London, which was a Borstal allocation centre. After a period of four weeks it was decided I was to go to Dover Borstal. A closed Borstal called the Citadel. For the first time I was on my own and

was moved from one cell to another having to share some times with others. I did not really enjoy things here, as it was lonely being on my own.

The Scrubs



Wormwood Scrubs

Dover Borstal (The Citaldal)

We were allowed to go to church on a Sunday, which I did to break the monotony. How ever I remember being horrified by the fact that I saw some inmate tearing pages out of the bible to role cigarettes. This was probably the first sense of me acknowledging the existence or fear of God.

When at Dover Borstal I was placed in an open dormitory with five other lads. Here I had to learn to survive. There was a 6 foot 6 inch Lad nicked named Te Oh who was bullied mercilessly by a 5 foot 6 spectaclad bottle job, called Vince Bowker. I saw this bullying the moment I arrived and Te oh was made to do this, do that, and he would say yes Vince, no Vince and so one hoping to get off lightly. In the end Te oh turned and lashed out on Vice Bowker and that put stopped to that. I was determined I was not going to let that happen to me. I stood my own ground whenever I sensed any one trying to bully me. I was in fact nick named Flash Clarke because I had all kinds of goodies like, cocoa, coffee, milk and sugar and even Ovaltine and had one of the senior green ties make me Ovaltine in the morning.

Borstal Boy

One bully, 6 footer, was moved into our dormitory because he had mercilessly bullied another inmate. We got on well until I tied his shoelaces together one morning for a joke but he didn’t see it that way. When he realized who it was that did it he threw these tied shoes at me in anger and this gave me a black eye. As

he came at me to hit me I was quick enough to hit him on the jaw bringing him down to the ground. After that he kept out of my way and the screw that could see my black eye ignored it. I think they must have known how to deal with bullies.

Electrical Installation Course

Whilst at Dover I went on a six months training course doing Electrical Installations and I worked really hard obtaining top marks every week and I use to be rewarded half an ounce of tobacco for coming top of the class. I traded this with an inmate for his ration of milk each morning and cornflakes and an egg each Sunday morning.

We had to attend church on a Sunday and were would be marched to church in whatever the weather. We would have to be dressed in our best gear after Sunday morning inspection. I remember I had no sense of respect for God or anything like that. In fact when the vicar Rev. Whally took us for talks before we were to leave Borstal I can remember ridiculing him in front of all the inmates. I thought it was a huge joke.

Dover Borstal



Dover Borstal (The Citadel)

Paternity Suite

Whilst serving my time in Borstal I was served with a summoned to appear in court to answer a paternity suit. A former girl friend was pregnant and I presume the Social Services had made her declare whom the father of the child was in order to get the finances but I am not sure as I never spoke to her about it. In fact I do not remember knowing any thing about it until I had to appear in court. The first time in court I admitted I was the father because I could have been even though I knew she had been with other men. At

the time. I was ordered to pay maintenance out of my three shillings and six pence a week, at the rate if one shilling and three pence per week. I had no idea of the serious nature of being a father or bringing up children or any idea of taking responsibility for my actions.

My mother how ever was very anxious and after listening to the evidence given by the girl, she maintained it was not possible for me to be the father, as the timing of the events did not fit. She encouraged me to appeal and she really fought the case for me. This I did and with the aid of a Solicitor the girl had to prove I was the father of the child. When I look back it must have been humiliating for the girl because she had to explain when and where these events took place. My defence solicitor asked where the event or events took place. With incredulity he questioned her how could things take place in a bubble car, in the daylight. This I think on reflection was humiliating for her.

The suit was not proven and I was release from the charge. My probation officer Mr Moorland Hughes asked me many years latter, when I became a Christian and had to appear in court over my confessions to many crimes, “Was I the father of the child”, I replied I might have been.

The child was called David and my mother say’s he had ginger hair. She had seen him out with his mother in Aylesbury whilst I was still in Borstal. He must be around 33 years old now.

I met all kinds of lads here in Borstal, car thieves, burglars, forgers, and gamblers. None of us had any idea for the reason of our existence but were probably looking for the best in life never finding it.

When I was released I was determined to have a good time. I wanted the best clothes, a good car, a speedboat, and a caravan. You name it I wanted all these things and intended to obtain them by one means or another. I had learned many criminal ways and had no intention going straight. I just had no intention of getting caught at any crime I may choose to be involved in.

11 My Release From Borstal

I was released from Borstal a year later and it was during this time I began to get into all kinds of things and criminal activities in Aylesbury.

My Gold Mini



My First Car 850 CC Mini

I bought my first real car for £100 when I came out of Borstal. It was a gold mini 850 cc.

I decided to visit my brother who was now in Maidstone Prison and I visited him when I could. Whilst he was there he met an inmate senior man from Cyprus who told him some fantastic story, which we both believed. We had ideas of being involved in gold smuggling.

It led to my brother absconding from prison and being on the run from the law for a year. He was offering us the opportunity to make money by smuggling gold. The idea was we had to pretend to be just married, we would have a suitable partner and we would carry the gold strapped under our clothes making out we were newly weds. This would reduce the chances of being stopped by customs and so get the gold through. We were prepared to take the risk. It sounded exciting and that was what I wanted.

The plan was that when my brother came out on home leave we he would go to Greece. We had to a contact in London all set up by the Greek man and take it from there. We were all hyped up but the was no such person or arrangements and we felt really let down.

However my brother decided he could not face going back to prison so he just did not return. He changed his name to Kenny? And managed to stay away from the police for a whole year before being picked up whilst working on a building site in Aylesbury.

At this time I was doing a Government training course in Enfield Middlesex and Michael got some work with a shop filling company and worked in London. He decided he would live above the shop, which was near Kings Cross, where they were

working and so I was able visit him during the week.

For a bit of fun one morning we decided to go to the cafe down the road dressing in our pajamas and dressing gowns bringing with us our own cornflakes. We went into the shop and asked for breakfast bowls and milk and sugar. This seemed a funny thing to do and it all went down well.

Michael soon got fed up being there on his own so he decided he was leaving.

So one night we took all the companies tools and equipment and returned to Aylesbury where our parents lived.

During this time I renewed friendship with Pat Jones and we did many things together. My brother had got a girlfriend now and I was seeking to have a good time.

On one occasion I showed Pat Jones the powerful effect of chloroform and knocked him out so he was unconscious. Moved by my strange sense of humour I cut several chunks of hair from his head and when he came too he had no idea what I had done. I found it great fun when I took him home and saw his mother’s face. Of course he had no idea what she was upset about. I just left and got out of the way laughing to my self.

It was after this that Pat Jones got the first skinhead hair cut in Aylesbury. No one would normally cut all their hair off it just was not yet fashionable. He did it and I was proud of him. I am sure he set the trend of the Skinhead fashion.

Mods, Skinheads, Greasers at Yarmouth

On one bank holiday weekend in 1969, when I was working for Radio Rentals in Hemel Hempstead, Pat Jones and I decided to go to Yarmouth and meet with the Aylesbury Mods, later called skinheads.

I took my firms Ford van in which we would sleep the night. On this particular weekend I was sleeping in the back of the Ford van that Sunday afternoon and Pat Jones was out with some of the lads. They had a run in with a crowd of Greasers.

Greasers were motor bikers who would fight with knives and motorbike chains. It was a very similar to the Mods and rockers you see in The Who film Quadraphenia. They were the sworn enemies of skinheads.

Mods On a Bank Holiday Weekend



Mods at Margate and News Reports

This company of Greasers had come across Pat Jones and his crowd when out on the sea front in Yarmouth and they were combing the area for skinheads, to pick a fight with. There were too many of them and Pat Jones and the crowd was on the run and I was happily asleep in the back of the van quite safe. Or I would have been had not Pat Jones came running up to the van shouting and screaming to get out and run or do some thing. He ran off just having just called attention to these Greasers. As I looked up and came too and looked out of the van window I could see a crowd of Greasers grinning and running towards the van. They knew they now had a victim in a van. I was concerned it was the firms van so had to get away. There wasn't much I could do so I locked the doors quickly and jumped into the driver's seat hoping to drive. Unfortunately I was awkwardly parked. As I tried to start the engine a great whack came from the roof of the van. The van was hit a number of times with motorbike chains and I heard shouts of glee. Then they began to rock the van seeking to turn it over. They lifted it and rocked it as I tried to drive forward then backwards. I must have hit one or two as I managed to gut get away in time for a beating. That was all thanks to Pat Jones!

This how ever was all part of our fun getting into scrapes of one kind or another. On the way home that week end we decided to tow a four wheeled sea side bike back to Aylesbury so I got Pat Jones to ride the bike whilst we towed this bike all the way from Yarmouth to the outskirts of Norwich before deciding to lead it outside a pub as I began to realize we would be captured by the police going through London. It was all good fun and it made us laugh.

Newquay Here We Come

It was the summer of 1968, shortly after my brother had been released from prison and I had served time in Borstal. We had decided to go on a holiday, seeking

the sun.

Our Holiday to Newquay



Newquay The Place Of The Sun

He had become friendly with a girl called Karen Mead but that did not stop our plans. We were going to go off with no plans to return. Michael had a nice long wheeled base Bedford van. This was fitted out with our equipment to live and we fitted a double mattress on the roof with a tarpaulin like tent. This was to be our sleeping arrangements.

It was decided we would make our way to Newquay in Cornwall as I remembered going there with my parents when I was 16 years old. That year the sun was hot, the surfing was good and a really nice summer. We were off to seek the sun. **Our Bedford Van**



This is where we slept for 6 weeks

Our first mischief that we planned but fail to do was the stealing of a speedboat, moored in the water at Barnstable. That evening we had planned to swim out to the boat and cut its moorings and float it down river to load on a trailer. That after noon we borrowed tools from a workshop and got some welding done to make a tow bar for the van. We needed a tow hitch to drive away with the stolen speedboat and trailer that night.

All went to plan until that night when we got the trailer ready but when we looked at the cold dark water, it being pitch black, we both lost our bottle and decided to call it off. We left Barnstable disappointed

The Beatles Magical Mystery Tour

I had been to Newquay before and I told Michael all about it. It was the place to go for surfing and to seek the sun. The Beatles had been there before us and stayed at the Atlantic Hotel and were filming their notable film Magical Mystery Tour. The Beatles stayed at the Atlantic Hotel in Newquay. They booked into The Atlantic Hotel in Newquay on Tuesday 12 September 1967 and left on Friday 15th. Newquay was a famous place to go on holiday and we knew why.

Our Holiday A Place of the Sun

Our first mischief that we planned but fail to do was the stealing of a speedboat, moored in the water at Barnstable. That evening we had planned to swim out to the boat and cut its moorings and float it down river to load on a trailer. That after noon we borrowed tools from a workshop and got some welding done to make a tow bar for the van. We needed a tow hitch to drive away with the stolen speedboat and trailer that night.

The Atlantic Hotel Newquay



The Atlantic Hotel Where The Beatles Stayed

All went to plan until that night when we got the trailer ready but when we looked at the cold dark water, it being pitch black, we both lost our bottle and decided to call it off. We left Barnstable disappointed..

I Am A Waiter At The Gull Rock Hotel

Our first bit of work, which we did, was to work in "The Gull Rock Hotel" in Newquay. I was a waiter and my brother was a kitchen porter. I had never been a waiter before but soon picked it up.

We were given sleeping quarters but we soon realized this kind of work and life was not what we wanted. The hours were unsociable hours. So the next

morning we decided not to go to work, just stay in bed. We made a huge joke of it and expected to get the sack.

Sure enough we were knocked up when it was realized we were late but still we did not surface. When we decided to get up we went to the chef believing we had got the sack and so to collect or pay. To my surprise they hadn't sacked us but had just thought we had too much to drink the night before and were prepared to over look the sleep in. I said no we would leave and we each got the £1 each we had earned for the day's work.

In or mischief we went back to the sleeping quarters the next day where the girls were sleeping and jumped into bed with two of the girls. They didn't want this really and made a bit of a protest but before we left the manager's wife had been informed and came to see what was happening. As she came into the bedroom we were seen in bed with Angela the chambermaid. The manageress screamed, "Oh! Angela how could you". The girl got the sack and I felt really bad about that afterwards.

Shortly after this we decided to rob a petrol station to get some money. My brother tried to disguise him self by wearing a long girls wig but this made him stand out even more because he was flat chested and had no hips like a woman and this attracted attention rather than do the opposite. That idea was discarded so I decided I would take the money. When the attendant was looking after a motorist I crept up to the till and took the notes and ran away behind some building. Then quickly dressed in an old overall coat and then walked slowly away without being noticed.

We Return Home To Aylesbury

In the end I noticed my brother writing to his girl friend and somehow we decided to return home to Aylesbury.

After this I began to spend time with Pat Jones as my brother got more involved with his girl friend. Pat Jones and I got into all kinds of things, which I will mention later on. I was 20 years old and he was just 16 years so he began to learn many things off me, all which was probably bad for him.

It was after this I managed to get a job with Radio Rentals in Hemel Hempstead

This was a good job and at 20 years old I was the only Colour TV Engineer in the Hemel Hempstead branch and with a company car.

Our Trip To Shoreham

About this time we went on a sailing trip to Shoreham near Brighton. This weekend we were invited to go sailing with Ken and Grace Knight. I took Mary Bilton a girl friend of mine, Bernie Gilbert and Alison Knight. Whilst we were there Mrs. (Grace) Knight went off to stay with a Christian friend in Brighton. Not that I knew that at the time I just thought she did not like sailing and it was a Sunday and she wanted to go to church.

The History Of The Jews And 1967

We were all invited back to this Christian man’s home. He was called Tom and was a manager of an insurance company in Brighton. That afternoon he sat and talked to us all about the bible. I was almost convinced by his talk and began to believe there was more to the bible message than I had ever really liked to admit before. He told us about the history of the Jews and all future events. It was all foretold in the scripture. The history of Israel was recorded and the return of the Jews to the land of Israel in 1967 was clearly a sign of the last days.

I was very impressed at what he said. So much so that I began to tell my friends at college the very next week all about it. This made me read parts in Deuteronomy about the curses that would come upon the Jews if they forsook Moses Law and reject the Lord Jesus Christ.

Pat Jones And The Bully

At this time Pat Jones was in his final year at school and he informed me of a bully who would relentlessly give him grief at school. The school was the Grange Secondary Modern School in Aylesbury. The school I had attended until June 1966.

One day at the evening youth club held at the school I decided we would sort this bully out so I instructed Pat ‘ Bones” to do as I said. I was dressed in my long Crombie over coat, which my mum had altered for me, and inside I kept a large long rubber torch, which was ideal for use as a cosh. Not too hard to break the skull and not too soft to do no harm. Just about right to knock some one on the head and possibly knock them out.

This was the plan. We were to go to the youth club and search out this bully. The Grange youth club was held behind the school buildings in some prefabricated buildings. It was early evening and not too dark and a

few people were around. Here we looked out for the bully.

I gave Pat Jones the large heavy rubber torch and said to him when he sees the bully he must call out to him, “ Come here” and walk towards him. When he came right up close he was to shout at him the words, “I have had enough of your nonsense and if you don’t watch out I am going to set Dave Clarke on to you”. He was then to point in the direction away from him so at to make him turn around and say’ “ look he is over there”. When he turned around he was to hit him on the head, as hard as he could with the torch. Then say, “ Now I am going to do it again and roar at him.

The plan went perfectly. We saw the bully dressed in a Denhim Jean jacket he had slight ginger hair. I am sure his nickname was Ginger) .I had never met him before. Pat Jones shouted out to him and sure enough the bully came walking like a gorilla with his arms swinging by his side. Almost running to get at Pat Jones eager to get him. I was happy because this was where he was going to get the treatment. Pat did exactly as instructed. He said look over there and as he turned around Pat walloped this bully hard on the head. Every eye was on the two in conflict. The bully was stunned and his hands went up to his head to hold it as it hurt. Then Pat shouted at him to say he was going to give it to him again and sure enough the bully ran away as predicted. I encouraged Pat to chase after him to make sure he now knew his place. Every one looking on looked in amazement.

From that day forward Pat Jones had no more trouble from that bully. I felt quite satisfied in dealing this way with the bully.

How would Jesus have us deal with bullies today? This is a real problem to parents in a world of violence like to day. I was not a Christian but this remedy actually worked in Pat Jones’s case.

12 Conversion from Crime to Christ

Having worked through and experience many things I often thought about life and its meaning. I could recall the absolute emptiness of my soul after going out for the evening and coming home. All was empty and what was the point to it all. I was seeking an answer to life, the universe and every thing.

A Bad LSD Trip

The following is an account, taken from memory and notes made of my experience of conversion to

Jesus Christ on Friday, 16th January 1970.

Towards the end of 1969 I was continuing my studies at Luton College learning Radio and Television Servicing. We would often engage in discussions and it was quite easy to divert our lecturer onto subjects like spiritualism and the like. We would discuss what we would do if another world war came. We would talk about the future as portrayed by Nostradamus, drugs and our experiences. At that time I was informed of a new film called Easy Rider and wanted to see it. On one occasion I obtained some hashish mixed with opium and smoked this during our break time. This was so effectual I made use of the sick room at college to sleep and enjoy the illusionary effects of the drug, which amused my student friends.

On another occasion in January 1970 I had obtained 4 tablets of LSD from Peter Coppenhall, a student friend from Bedford, he was one of my fellow students at Luton College, and I decided to take them the following Friday night 16th January 1970

On this Friday night the 16th of January my brother I decided to each took half a tablet and Pat Jones had a quarter. He had been a close friend of mine (he was only just 16 years old) for some time and I use to think of him as my apprentice. I taught him all my bad ways. There was little we did not do together. I had known him whilst he was at school and encouraged him in crime, sniffing chloroform, smoking (marijuana, hashish, weed etc.) drunkenness, violence and permissive sex. He was known amongst our friends as “Bones”, Patrick Bones.

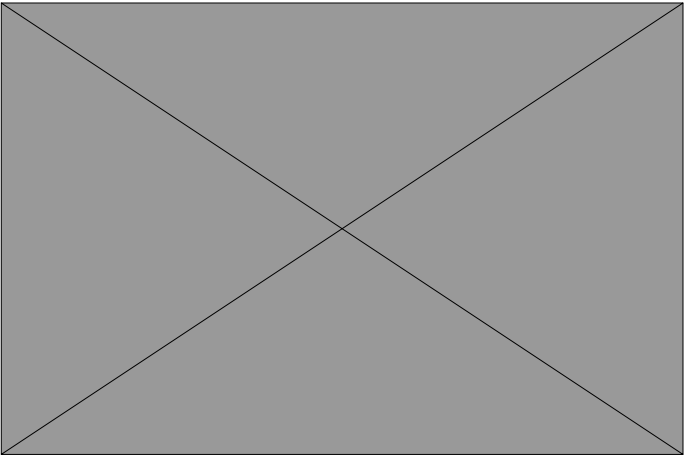
My brother was going out that night with his girl friend Karen Mead so Pat Jones and I decided to walk up town and not risk driving for we did not know the effect this drug would have on us. I was dressed in my old clothes deliberately for I did not know what might happen too us. We tried to thumb a lift but eventually caught a bus and got off at the bottom of the High Street. As we walked past the “pictures” I noticed the film “Easy Rider” was being shown so we decided to go and see it.

We wanted to take some one else with us, some one who was in their right state of mind, so we went up the billiard hall and found Bernie Gilbert and Mike Ellis but they said they would only come and watch the film with us if they too had some acid.

I decided this was OK, and so we got a taxi back to my house to get the rest of the Acid. Bernie had half a

tablet and Mike Ellis the other quarter. So all four of us were about to trip on acid whilst watching the film Easy Rider. We arrived back at the “pictures” about 8.45 PM and I fumbled a bit with my ticket as the acid had begun to take effect. Bernie and Mike suggested we go and sit up in the balcony but I thought to my self, what if we decide to jump off? I was tripping now and just followed them up the stairs. We sat two in front and two behind, but Mike and Bernie’s trip had not yet begun as they acted and spoke normally.

The Film Easy Rider



Peter Fonda and Dennis Hopper

They seemed to know how to give the correct lighting and sound effects. How ever Bernie and Mike seemed to be jumping about all over the place and it was irritating. I still was sitting in my seat when all the people had gone, before I decided there was nothing more to do. So we decided to up and go but Mike and Bernie were annoying me because they were mucking about.

All my thoughts and feelings began to reverberate four times over and thought patterns were being reflected and at the same time building and snowballing.

We walked outside the cinema and I said to the boys, “Man you are all on the wrong scene you can’t be turned on”. Then I heard Mike and Bernie say he’s turned into a wizard (Hippie) and there was a club room for wizards like me (The Dark Lantern Pub in Aylesbury). I then began a downward trip, which ended in the horrors. I began to feel paranoid thinking they were now sorry for me and were being polite in hiding their feelings from me.

As we went further up the road Mike Ellis asked if I wanted a scrap with some blokes across the street.

It was as if he was testing me out to see if I was the same person he knew. I said no I didn’t. I thought they had thought I had gone mad and they wanted to test me out. We went further up the high street and Bernie began to mess about and pull faces at me and make noises. I hid in a shop door way and told him to stop it and Pat Jones pulled Bernie away saying don’t do it as he didn’t understand. My horror began when I could not face the thought that they thought I had cracked up and gone mad. This feeling was too much for me to bare. More was to come.

We decided to go to the Crown pub and Brian Sale came up to me and spoke but I was out of my mind by now with this feeling of paranoia and could not speak sensibly and came out with a load of nonsense, so I had to say quickly I was drunk because I didn’t think he would understand other wise.

I then saw my Michael sitting with his girl friend and I went up to him and told him what was happening. He laughed and motioned to wined me up like a clockwork toy and then my mind began to distort so much so I had to run out of the pub to get away. Pat Jones followed me and I kept thinking the others were following us. I kept looking back as I didn’t want them following me as they annoyed me. We left the Green Man and walked towards Mount Street, via Richford’s Hill and along Friarage Road. On the way down it seemed like a scene from a picture book and was like Alice in Wonderland with all the street lamps lit up.

The torment of my mind had grown so much that I could not bare the pain but I could not get rid of the torment. Ken and Grace Knight lived at Mount Street. We went down there with no real aim and as I arrived just outside their house Jock Macallion, another friend of mine, was about to leave and drive off. I jumped in besides him and told him my situation. After telling him I was tripped out of my mind I was thinking he would take me home and as I was about to ask him he said, “Dave you are a worried man”. I knew this and I now though so did every one else and being told that did not help me at all. My mind was about to blow so I had to run again. I jumped out of the car and into 24 Mount Street where Ken and Grace were. I wanted to escape and so I told them my plight but I could not explain to them what was happening to me. Grace Knight recalled she thought I was in serious trouble and began to question me. This didn’t help so I had to

say forcefully I must have peace so they took me out to the summerhouse to lie down in peace.

No one seemed to understand the torment of mind I was in and no one could help me at all. I told Mrs Knight to leave me alone to work it out on my own and let me lie down. Then the torment got worse. I knew it was only the LSD doing it but I could do nothing about it I would have to wait till it had taken its course. I thought it could be 12 hours or so but to me each moment seemed like an eternity of torment and I could not endure this any more.

I lay down and tried to settle my mind by thinking good thoughts and different things but my mind would not be controlled. The thought came, “ I may be driven to kill myself to get rid of the pain”, but I was horrified at the thought and the more I tried to stop thinking like it the more I thought about it. I looked around to see if there was a mirror or glass in the room and wanted to get rid of it just in case I cut my throat or wrists. I just did not know what to do I was at the end of my self.

In this condition it was evident I could not help myself. My friends could not help; my brother had not helped. Mr and Mrs Knight couldn’t help and I could not help myself.

In this desperation it came to me to call out to God for help. So I cried out calling on the Lords name saying, “Jesus please help me”. At that moment my mind went blank and his name appeared in the imagination of my mind but the torments soon came back again. I called out again and his name appeared twice and the happening repeated. I called four times in all and his name appeared four times and formed a square in complete emptiness.

I then began to feel emotional and wept but I didn’t know why and at that moment Mrs knight came to the chalet door to see if she could help. It was then, at that, a flood of guilt overcame me. I was convicted of the sin of Adultery and did not know what to do. I beckoned Mrs Knight to come in and said to her did she realize how bad I was and what I had done. I asked her to tell me the way what could I do.

Mrs Knight had spoken to me about Christian things and some how I knew she knew the way. Mrs Knight sat down and quoted the scripture saying, “ For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten son that who so ever believed on him should not perish but have everlasting life.” (John 3 verse

16).

Dave I Am With You

After this Jesus spoke to me, I heard his voice as clearly I am writing this he said, “Dave I am with you, you have been searching for a long time, this is what our Father says. What you have been going through is nothing compared to what hell is like. I replied with thanks giving saying thank you, Jesus thank you.

Mrs knight I think thought that I was speaking to her she but she did not know what was going on.

It seemed that the words that Mrs Knight had spoken, were in fact the way out and pathway to my escape. It appeared as though I was at the bottom of a pyramid and the words were the way to the top and if I were to follow the words I would escape. I replied thank you Jesus thank you.

I then thought of hell and my thoughts were about the Pat Jones, Bernie Gilbert and Mike Ellis and I said what about the others. Jesus spoke again and said, “ all I could do was tell them”.

I replied feeling it an impossible thing to do to convince them ”but what more could I do” I was feeling the agony of the LSD horrors and knew I wanted to warn my friends of the hell to come. I reasoned within my self they will think I have gone mad on LSD how could I convince them, I wanted to do more than tell them. I asked what more could I do.

All I could Do Was Tell Them

In order to answer my question the Lord took me back in time to show me all I could do was tell them. A number of weeks earlier I had reason to read about the curses that were to come on the children of Israel if they forsook their God. Deut. 28 v 53. And though shall eat the fruit of thine own body. (I knew nothing about the back ground to these things) I thought it was saying people would be so hungry and having no food to eat a woman would be driven to eat her own after birth. Which of course was shocking. With this in mind these weeks earlier I was trying to shock this girl at work. I was working for Radio Rentals as a Colour TV engineer and I said to this receptionist how would she like to be so hungry to have to eat her own after birth? She responded with expected repulsion “ How could you say such a thing”. I simply said I hadn’t said it but God has. This thing repulsed her and she did not want to know anything about what I was saying (Not suppressing). However to this incident Jesus took me

and asked me, “ what did the girl do when I spoke to her”? My answer was she shut her ears, as she did not want to know. It was repulsive to her. His reply was to me that, “ if I tell people about Hell and what I had learned and they screw their faces up and do not want to know I could do no more.” The condition of the person listening is not my responsibility but theirs. All I could do was tell them. So tell them I would.

To these questions Mrs. Knight thought I was asking her, because I was speaking aloud, but before she could answer I had been answered directly from the Lord.

When Jesus stopped speaking I felt as though I was falling back into my torment and I prayed again, “Please don’t leave me”. My reply was, “ I will never leave you”.

Why Boast

Jesus then questioned me and asked me, “Why boast”. This is because I was naturally prone to boasting amongst my friends just to make a good impression. I reason within myself now and now knew I had no need to boast of anything. So from that day I have always avoided boasting.

My torment ceased from that time and the rest of the night passed with various thoughts going through my mind. I do not think Mrs Knight was fully aware of what had taken place.

The next day was Saturday and I was due in to work but I decided to take the day off. I phone in briefly saying I was not up to work.

13 What after Salvation

Pat Jones had spent the night in the caravan parked at the side of the Knight’s home, together with Paddy who had no where else to live. We spent that day together and I told them both of my experience. I assumed and expected them to fully understand and see what had happened.

Instinctively things were different with me. An internal change had come about and by it I had new desires. I no longer wished to live as I had lived and wished to be rid of my bad ways. No one told me I had to give up any particular way of life, I found within me an internal desire to choose the good and refuse the evil.

Evidence of the New Birth

Upon reflection I say this was the evidence of the new birth and I later found this experience spoken

of by the Lord Jesus Christ in Johns gospel. John 3. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily I say unto thee, except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. The Apostle Paul also writes the same in Cor. 5 17. Therefore if any man were in Christ Jesus, he is a new creature: old things are past away; behold all things are become new.

I knew also there was a part of me which was just the same and when I would do good evil was also present with me. The Apostle Paul in Romans also expressed this. Rom. 7 verse 21. I find then a law that when I would do good evil is present with me.

Whilst this was my experience I found it impossible to convey this to my friends even thou I tried ever so hard.

What To Do With Stolen Goods

I had in my possession much stolen property. In fact hundreds of pounds worth of stolen goods. I was no longer prepared to live off the benefits of stolen goods. What should I do? I had involved others in my crime of stealing and these could not help me now. In fact Mike West came to see me the next day and when he heard me explaining Jesus had spoken to me he began to fear I might go to the police and confess my crimes. I did not actually say to him I wanted him to return the Colour TV set, which I had stolen and swapped for his Citroen car but he was concerned, as he did not know what to think.

Poor Mike he must have panicked thinking I was about to go to the police, as he was concerned some of the stolen goods that I had left in his garage were a stolen including the mini engine sub chassis. I don’t remember what happen to these parts but I asked Mike to dispose of them. I was later informed they had been dumped in the reservoir.

That Saturday evening both Pat and I decided to go to the Social Club at Park Street.

This was the usual thing for us to do on a Saturday night. I had determined to go and see my mates to explain what had happened to me. We walked down there but did not go in. After seeing one or two people I broke my news to them. I cannot remember what I said. I had no desire to stay so went back to the Knight’s home. My inclination to live it up as normal was no longer with me. I now seemed at a loose end not knowing what next to do. From that time forward Pat Jones began to realize things had really changed for me.

The next day, being Sunday, Mrs Knight took both Pat Jones and I to the local Baptist Church in Southcourt, in the evening. I distinctly remember the passage of scripture the preacher spoke from. It was in Exodus where the whole nation of Israel was about to enter the Promised Land. However they listened to the evil reports of the 10 spies and did not take heed to the voice of the two good spies. Who gave encouragement to go in and possess the land? I remember also I saw, whether he preached this or not, that this was a picture of the body of Christ - the church of that day.

Seek To Tell Others

After the meeting Mrs Knight introduced me to a Martin White who gave me a copy of the New Testament called the Good News for modern man. I began to read this straight away. This I received gratefully and began to read it every day

The following days were spent in the after glow and certainty of this new life that had opened up to me. I thirsted for knowledge, the knowledge of God in Jesus Christ. I told the folk at work about my experience and could not remain silent about the things I was learning.

Southcourt Baptists



South Court Baptist Church

My evenings were spent at Mrs Knight’s home discussing the scripture with some of her Christian friends. Both Pat Jones and Paddy all seemed interested to hear.

My own ignorance never read the Bible

I am now amazed at my own ignorance then for until then I had never read the bible for myself. I did not know what the Acts of the Apostles meant. Within two weeks I had read the New Testament and thought I understood it all. I soon learned from the scripture

that in the economy of Salvation it was the blood of Jesus Christ shed on the cross at Calvary that was the means of me obtaining a free pardon for all my sins. And also that I was given freely a righteousness to justify me before God.

In this respect the Lord Jesus was a true substitute and he died for me without cost at all to me. These were the things, which I learned and as it were drank in like water from the well of salvation. I learned them by reading the scripture and did not know them from the night Jesus spoke to me.

Difference at College

I attended college that week but there was a difference. I had decided I would not dress in my usual clothes to show off. Which would have been Levi jeans, white boots with red toe caps (or whatever colour I chose to spray them), a Ben Sherman shirt and loose leather jerkin. I felt I must not only be more sober but dress more soberly too i.e. not show off as I use to do.

So I dressed in my best trousers, which were from my Prince of Wales cheque suit, shirt and normal pull over and normal shoes. O course I had to tell all my friends about my experience. I protested to them look I even dress differently. They could not believe me. I told one of the lecturers, Mr. Jones, in front of them all but I was just given a smile of wonder.

I Tell Rupert

That same week I felt constrained to go and tell my friend Rupert, a West Indian from Jamaica. He lived in a room, at 14 Bicester Road Aylesbury so Pat Jones and I went to see him. As soon as I met him I told him what had happened in front of his new girl friend but Rupert’s reply was, “ I told you Dave not to take LSD “. Again they were none plus, they could not believe even though I tried my best to convince them.

Turning From The world

Being in the world but not of it. It was now wrong for me to continue in the way of life that I had lived in the past. My back was now turned from the world that I once laid hold on, and had built for myself. I was self-seeking (ones own glory), asserting self without considering others, stealing, and thoughts of adultery, fornication, drug taking, drug selling, boasting, drunkenness, violence and worldly ambition. I say worldly ambition because I believe we all have worldly ambitions but when we are converted and

come to Christ we are called to forsake it; that is forsake the world and its ambitions.

We all have our own worlds to forsake when we become a Christian. Some have a religious world to turn from; as a person may have been born in a religious family or have a circle of religious friends but in their world they have their own natural fallen nature to contend with. Fallen human nature seeks to gratify its desires and as such sin the whole day long. A religious person still has all the workings of a natural man as those who have no religion. Any thought or act, which is born out of selfishness, greed, pride, avarice, thinking evil of others, back biting, slander and prejudice may all be practiced by those in a religious or none religious world. So to forsake the world means to forsake all those thoughts and actions, which are natural to us, and are contrary to the way of Christ.

Religious And None Religious Persons

Need to turn from their world

Some persons have no religion or religious friends, yet they too have natural desires and a fallen human nature, which they seek to please. Ambitions of fame for its own sake, the love of money, selfishness, the practice of gossip, evil speaking of others, are all to be turned from. It doesn’t matter whether you be in a religious or none religious person we are to world are to be forsaken the world from which we come from when we seek to follow Christ. We are called to be in the world but not of it. This is really what John Bunyan sought to express when he told his story of the man who turn his back on the city of destruction. One of the problems how ever was that his story only described the picture of those who were none religious and the pattern of their life styles. In reality a religious person, one who is not born again, has a pattern and life style, which is equally wrong and such need to be turned from. It is very easy for such a person to think because they do not do certain things that they see people in a none-religious world do, to look down and judge them thinking they are better than them. Not so, we all have a world to turn from. When a person is born again they have an ordinary life natural to them and are part of the natural world but we all must turn from our world in order to follow Christ

Kept By The Power And Grace Of God

I now had an inward and real desire not to continue

in those ways, which I have just mentioned, for they just perpetuated my former sinful self, of which I had, had enough. A change of heart had taken place. This was the fight. That is not to say I could not be tempted to find pleasure in such sins there was a part of me still the same but I had a desire to put to death sinful thoughts and actions. Should I allow wrong affections to move me I was self-condemned with an accompanying self-abhorrence and I knew was not pleasing to God. By the grace of God I was able to resist and fight against sin.

14 What To Do With Stolen Goods

I was now moved by a new set of principles but here in lay a problem. I had erected a 48-foot by 12-foot wooden builder’s shed on waste ground belonging to the Water Board next door to the Knight’s home at 24 Mount Street. This became my garage and workshop. I had stolen the builders shed from a building sight in Berkhamstead. I had persuaded Mr. Knight to drive his lorry whilst me, Pat Jones and Paddy lifted the shed panels from the building sight late one night.

In this shed was my newly acquired Citroen DS car, which had formally belonged to Mike West of Wendover. I had swapped it for a colour TV that we had stolen from old peoples home called Redlands, in Winslow. I had some lovely garage equipment which included a trailer, ark welder, trolley jack, air compressor, spray gun, tools, speed boat engines even a stolen car and various other items all of which by one means or another I had stolen or burgled.

My Citroen DS Car

What could or should I do now. I was responsible for at this stuff. Conscience would not permit me to continue to make us of all this stolen gear. What should I do? Should I just dispose of it all and brush the past behind me? How should I dispose of it if I decide to do so? I could not sell the goods for what would I do with the money. Conscience would not allow me to use it. I had in fact so much stolen property go through my hands, which had been disposed of by one means or another, none of it could be recovered anyway.

My Citroen DS what I acquired



Citroen DS except mine was Banana Yellow

I had only just stolen a nice new Mini car, which was about to be used to make me a lovely new car.

Stolen Mini from Hemel Hempstead

The body had been cut up and disposed of in my parents’ garage in Finmere Crescent Aylesbury. (Whilst cutting up the body with the arc welder the hydrolastic suspension fluid caught light a nearly burnt the car and garage to pieces).

I had also another stolen Morris Minor Traveller, which I had swapped the number plates and disposed of the old body. This was and used it as a hire car. I think on reflection with hindsight and the faith I now have in God I would have been able to act differently than I did.

The Stolen Mini



My Stolen Mini

I was able during this time to return one or items of stolen goods. Late one wet night in February 1972 Pat Jones and I loaded the trolley jack into my firms van. I am not quite sure what Pat Jones thought about

all this but I drove up to the garage from where I had originally stolen the trolley jack and parked on the forecourt.

Returning The Trolley Jack

The garage had been closed for the night (next to the Broad Leys pub on the Wendover Road, Aylesbury) and whilst no one was about I opened the van door and swiftly and quietly lifted the jack and placed it down on the forecourt. We then drove off as fast as we could. I often wondered what did the owner think when it was returned several months later.

I had no real advisers or any one who really knew the depths of my crimes and the amount of acquired stolen goods I had. I was faced with this problem what ever happens to me was no real concern but I did not feel I could involve others and get them into trouble. Mike West was very fearful in case I confessed all to the police and he must have been puzzled by what was going on. I had hoped he would have offered me the colour TV back and I would have given him the Citroen back but he wished to keep the Colour TV so I gave him the Citroen any way, as I felt I could not use it.

The Broad Leys



The Broad Lees Wendover Road

Dealing With Sin and Temptation

I did not need anyone to tell me what was right and wrong. I knew the difference and in particular the sin of fornication. This is sexual activity out side of marriage. Sexual temptation was really fierce and strong to me, but by the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ I fought the fight against them. So much so that I had to avoid meeting girls because of a natural inclination, which had I given into would not have been good for them or me. The words of Jesus are clear that the very thought of sex with another mans wife was to commit the sin of adultery and I agreed.

This area of my life was really difficult to me and would be to any new believer.

Hippies In The Shed

Pat Jones began to acquire new friends and some were what we called hippies. They smoked pot, took drugs and generally did nothing but think about life etc. We invited them down to Mount Street as I felt it would be right to speak to them about Jesus Christ. About five or six came and they ended up sleeping in the shed.

The Shed at Mount Street

Whilst trying to speak the gospel to them I saw no real effect so I was disappointed. Perhaps one day I will see some fruit. I felt it OK to use the shed to house the hippies. About six lived in the shed for a number of weeks until they moved on. I thought I was putting it to good use.

My problems were solved by an intervention of God and his hand was clearly seen by all one year later.

The Hippy Shed



The Stolen Builders Shed on Water Board Ground

This solution came by the knock on the door. It was the C.I.D when I was arrested for stealing the colour TV set from “Redfields” old peoples home in Winslow. See part 1.

14 Going to Church

During the first few weeks of conversion unto Christ, in February 1970 there were a series of meetings held at Limes Avenue Baptist Church. The person speaking was Mr. Lance Pibworth and a girl called Geraldine Dunbar was being baptized.

Limes Avenue Baptist Church



Limes Avenue Baptist Church Aylesbury

I saw my first baptism here. After the meeting a man informed the congregation that if any one wanted to talk about any thing or ask questions they could stay behind. On this occasion I had brought Pat Jones and Paddy along to the meeting. I was dressed in my overalls and leather jacket, which I always wore when working on cars- I wasn’t dressed up at all. I knew God did not look on the outward appearance but man may do so it did not bother me that we were not dressed for the occasion. I asked to see the minister Mr Sibthorpe and we three were invited into his study. I explained to Mr Sibthorpe about my conversion and wanted him to confirm that what I was saying to Pat Jones and Paddy was in fact true. On that occasion I half expected him to baptize me, there and then. I was under the impression, from reading the scripture, a minister of Christian were under direct command to baptize new believers as soon as they believed. I was very disappointed that he did not command me to be baptized that night. I knew nothing of church membership, modes of baptism, doctrinal distinctions and the like only that I should be baptized.

Shortly after this I met a man called Charley Tweedy, of the Church of Christ meeting (it is now a Seventh Day Adventist Church) at Stoke Mandeville Road, Aylesbury. He maintained that unless you are baptized you couldn’t be saved.

He held some kind of responsible position in this Church so I explained to him about my conversion after which he gave me his telephone number to ring him if I needed too. I knew he was wrong about baptism but felt constrained to speak to him as I reasoned according to him, “ I shall be damned if I die today if I am not baptized”. I felt the need to reassure him that was not the case and he need not worry. When I

rang him he seemed non plus nor moved with concern that I was not yet baptized. Again I was disappointed.

I Attend Various Churches

I had not been accustomed to go to any particular church but did go to a Sunday night meeting with Mrs. Knight. This was the Assemblies of God; Pentecostal church meeting at Rickford’s Hill and Pastor Baker was the minister. Here I was received without any question and made to feel welcome. This was also the church Cyril Bryan went to and where I met Barry Crown.

Giving A Testimony

On one occasion I was asked to give an up to date testimony as to the Lords dealing with me that week. So dressed as I was, in my working clothes (overalls) not knowing a difference between working days or Sabbath days, I went to the front of the congregation and gave a clear and detailed account as to how I had combated the devils suggestion to steel a car battery that week.

I had some trouble with my car battery and I needed a new one. The temptation was this. Here was I, passing Adam’s Garage, on the Tring Road in need of a car battery. Just over the fence belonging to the garage were several car batteries. All I had to do was nip over the fence and help my self. This was the way I had thought in the past and would have done just that all one time. Not now. This kind of thinking was the old man of whom I had to continually combat and I knew Satan had a hand in the matter. To avoid this temptation I rebuked the devil and told him to clear off in Jesus name. On that occasion I told them the exact language I had used to the devil. I said to the devil, “Bugger off Satan”. I was quite unaware of the bad language I had used, and a number of years later Barry Crown remembered that Cyril Bryan gently reproved me for my speech. I did not know that I had said any thing amiss so was unaware that I had even been reproved for using bad language. I don’t think I knew what the words meant any way.

Church of God near Stoke Mandiville



The Church of God, Mandeville Road Aylesbury

I Am Baptized

I knew from the scripture and believed I should be baptized and I expected Pastor Baker of the Assemblies of God Church to command me to be baptized. I knew this was the command of Jesus and it signified the new birth, which I had already experienced. It also symbolized my union with the Lord Jesus Christ in his death and resurrection. That through his death I was to reckon myself dead to sin and my former sinful ways and that by his resurrection I was to reckon myself risen with him to the newness of life, which is in him. No one spoke to me about being baptized.

Rickford’s Hill Assemblies of God



Assemblies of God Church Building

At that time shortly after the Limes Avenue meetings I was taken to another group of Christians meeting at Fleet Street in a large shed. These were West Indians and the Pastor was Mr Bruce from Luton. This group also was having a series of meetings leading up to a baptism. I heard they had permission to use the baptistery at Limes Avenue Baptist Church

so I asked Pastor Bruce to baptize me. He said he would and asked me to attend baptism classes that week with other people being baptized.

Fleet Street Pentecostal. Pastor Bruce from Luton was the overseer did not know what this was all about but presumed it was to make sure the person being baptized knew what it was all about. I was not told that after the baptism I was expected to join the church meeting at Fleet Street.

Fleet Street Pentecostal



Fleet Street Pentecostal Meeting Hall

I was baptized (dipped or immersed) upon the confession of my faith in the Lord Jesus Christ early one Sunday morning at 7.00 a.m. at Lime Avenue Baptist Church. My friends turned up, Pat Jones, Paddy, Paul Brooks, Mrs. Knight and Mrs. Chapski. Pastor Bruce baptized me in the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost, according to the command of our Lord Jesus Christ. Matth. 28 19.

Where Pastor Bruce, of the Assemblies of God Church, meeting at Fleet Street, Aylesbury, baptized me. I say this because I had met some that were teaching baptism was only valid if it was administered in the name of Jesus only. The reason being that they say the name of the Father is Jesus and the name of the Son is Jesus and the name of the Holy Spirit is Jesus. Gordon Smith, of Albert Street, informed me that some considered it was necessary to be re baptized in the name of Jesus only and that all other baptisms were invalid. I was not impressed by their reasoning and stress upon the singular name of Jesus to the exclusion of the Father and Spirit for Jesus had commanded baptism to be performed in the name of all three persons.

Mormons and Baptism

It was about this time that two Mormons spoke to me, whilst I was on the drive of our home in Finmere

Crescent, and they were insisting that my baptism was invalid, as it was not conducted by a person having the right authority. As I had read the scripture and understood what baptism was all about, I realized that these men were wrong. In later years I came across similar views by some Primitive Baptists in the Philippines, but there too were wrong. I had been baptized, according to the terms of the lord Jesus, and that by immersion. My baptism was as valid as if John the Baptist had baptized me himself.

I knew that as far as I could discern from scripture, a man could be dipped, ducked, dragged, drenched, soaked, sprinkled or dribbled with 10 thousand gallons of water it would make not a scrap of difference to his spiritual state. Baptism could not affect the new birth, remove sin or make a natural man a spiritual man for that was the sole prerogative of Him that proceeded from the Father and was sent by the Son. John 15 26. The new birth being the effect not of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God alone. John 1 13. Therefore Baptism could not save a sinner.

Baptism In The Spirit

I soon realized there were few churches in Aylesbury that believed the Baptism in the Holy Spirit was a distinct experience to being born again. I had no reason to doubt this and took it as a truth revealed in the Scripture.

I had no problem with this, as that was how I had read the bible. I actually felt I was baptized in the Spirit when I first believed and Jesus spoke to me. The only thing I seemed to lack was speaking in tongues. This had not happened.

I remember speaking to Mr Sibthorpe, the pastor of the Strict Baptist Church at Limes Avenue, about these things and he gave me an article written by John Stott who denied the Baptism in the Spirit, as I knew it. I was amazed at the way these people twisted and wriggled out of what God had plainly spoken about.

At that time I read as much as I could because this experience was not recognized by any other group of Christians apart from the Elim Pentecostal Churches. The best book that I read, at that time, was by Derek Prince called, “From Jordan to Pentecost”. This gave a very clear and biblical position about speaking in tongues and it being the evidence of the baptism in the spirit.

The Christian Life

Being converted unto Christ was by no means an outward imposed principle I was not under a set of rules. I was not under any kind of legal fear to serve God. A rule, which says do this and you will be OK. There was no rest in works that I could do. . It was in fact the rule of faith. It was to walk by faith, without which it is impossible to please God.

I was what the scripture describes a, “new man”, with an inward desire to follow the Lord Jesus Christ. The scripture expressed these as God writing His laws upon the fleshly tablets of the heart Heb 8. 10-13. I began to read the bible straight away and I read the Good New bible within two weeks of receiving it, which was good going for me who could barely read. I was able to understand most of what I read and thought I understood it all at first.

The Divine Nature of Jesus Christ

Before this time I was ignorant of its contents and very soon the principal points of the gospel became very clear to me: The divine nature, or deity of Jesus Christ was essential to understand. Hell was real just as heaven was sure. The actual reality of Adam and Eve and the fall of our first parents. The need for the shed blood of Jesus Christ to remove sin. That salvation and the forgiveness of sins was by faith alone, without works done by us. We were not under the Law of Moses as the Jews were but under Christ Jesus’ under his rule by His law the gospel of love and grace.

I remember trying to tell one of my friends about following Jesus saying that I didn’t have to give up any thing to become a Christian. I simple found that I did not want to do certain things any more. It was not difficult. This lad came up to me sometime after this and I am sure he misunderstood me and in front of several other lads said, isn’t it right you don’t have to give up any thing to be a Christian. He was expecting my answer to be no you can carry on just as you are. However I said that’s right you don’t have to give up any thing except sin. This silence him and I think they all got the point

Preaching Not Musical Entertainment

I learned that Gods way of saving people was through the preaching of Christ and him crucified. That the new birth was a must. What amazed me was the apparent lack of zeal and knowledge of them that

had professed faith in Christ. Also how these persons tended to try and entertain people by means of music instead of preaching.

Giving My Testimony

On the 22nd May 1972 I was asked to give my testimony to a meeting of people in Luton to about 400 people. I was not sure what the meeting was all about so I simply spoke as I felt right to do. I spoke the gospel as best I could. I was not fully conversant with the doctrines of grace but I was soon to learn the word more perfectly. Providentially this meeting was recorded and may be viewed on:

(Click here) [Converted on LSD Trip 1972 David Clarke](#)

Every Day The Sabbath Day

Every day was the Lords day to me, as I awoke I was conscious of the presence of God and when I slept, yea even in my dreams. I knew of no distinctions of days such as holy days or the Sabbath day for I knew these to be abolished or fulfilled in Christ. Jesus Christ being the sum and substance of all the Mosaic Sabbath. He was the body that cast the shadow of Moses Law. Col. 2 16-17.

Authorized Version of the Bible

At the Assemblies of God Church, at Richford’s hill, we had a representative from the Trinitarian Bible Society speak. Mr Cyril Bryan confirmed his belief how important it was to use a good translation of the Bible. It was pointed out to me that the modern versions often left out or changed the texts of scripture, which clearly taught the deity of Christ. From that time I began to be cautious of new versions and was happy to stick with the Authorized Version. This was helpful because all the books that I had begun to read quoted from the Authorized Version and not modern translations.

Giving Money

On another occasion I was attending the evangelical meetings at Fleet Street Pentecostal church and there was an appeal for money to support the young musicians. The man making the appeal was so moving I felt I ought to give all I could. I reached to my pocket and put in the collection plate all that I had. I was giving as unto the Lord. I was given to believe it was for the Lords work and it was needed. I was happy to give. Shortly after this the same steward who had collected the money came back to me from

the front of the meeting hall speaking and motioning to me with the roll of notes in his hand saying was I aware how much I had given. I said yes it was OK. It was probably about £200 as I was still use to carrying that sort of money around with me (1970).

Shortly after this at another meeting there was a visiting evangelist called C D Gilbert preaching and he too made similar moving appeals for money. I had also spoken to him about the tattoo on my arm. This was because I regretted having it. He had been saying if I believed God then it would go by a miracle. I asked him would he pray to have it removed. At the same meeting he appealed for money with a prophecy saying the Lord had told him that each one had to go to their bank tomorrow and draw 10 per cent of all their money and give it to his fund the next day. It followed by another vision of an accident that was going to take place if it was not done. At the same meeting he said there was some one in the meeting that doubted God and they must get of their seat and come forward that if they did not then another warning was issued. I knew because of our previous talk he had me in mind. I also knew his prophecy and visions were not of God but generated to control and manoeuvre people like witchcraft. I opposed this and would have nothing to do with it.

I even went to Mr Eric Connet and informed him that this type of talk and action was not genuine. Mr Connet was a preacher at the church and had some influence and could have helped to correct error.

I write this for the sake of any that may feel similar pressure from them who say that God sends them. Not all that is spoken in the name of Jesus is of God.

The Lord loves the cheerful giver. The Lord does not need our money. He wants our hearts. All that we have is His when this is the case. We are stewards of all that we own. I learned like the Sabbath there is no Sabbath day for every day is Sabbath, so with money there is no tithe of 10 percent but all our possessions are the Lords, not just 10 percent.

Doing The Work Of An Evangelist

I found it my natural desire to preach and speak about Jesus to who ever I could. I remember working on a car in Mount Street one Sunday morning and a crowd of street kids all who I knew were playing around doing nothing. I was dressed in my overalls and leather jacket and I suggested they come with me to church. I decided to take them to a former Brethren

Assembly called Granville Street Evangelical. I knew all these lads and realized we were all untidily dressed and that we may not be readily accepted. I knew however the scripture, which taught when you are invited to a meal, then take the lowest seat or place in the room. I decided we should adopt this principle so when we went into the hall, part way through the meeting. We slipped in and I beckoned them all to sit down on the floor. This we did without any noise. These lads were Paul Mitchell, Clifford Atley (Tatty), Michael Clarke and one or two others.

Granville Street Evangelical Church. Aylesbury (former Brethren) where I took the lads from the street to the meeting one Sunday morning. All the eyes of the congregation seemed to be on me. The meeting was stopped and a man came up and sure enough according to the scripture we were invited to sit on chairs towards the front of the meeting room.

Granville Street former Brethren Church



Granville Street Evangelical

Later on in that meeting they had what was called the “breaking of bread”. They were an open communion church and their custom was to allow any believer to partake of the bread and wine. As the bread and the cup passed by they could help them selves. This bread and wine spoke of the death of Jesus till he come again. On this occasion however when the plate and cup came to our row it was passed by. We were judged as ineligible. I felt upset at this, as the stewards had judged us by an outward appearance and not as God. The problem then I suppose,” I did not dress as a Christian”.

I meet Peter Howe minister of the gospel

It was at this time I met Mr Peter Howe, a former pastor at Hearne Bay Evangelical Church, who also befriended my friends Paul and Sue Aston. Paul was a

bible student studying at Watford and valued any help he could get. It was soon after this that Mr Peter Howe became the Pastor of the Ivanhoe Particular Baptist Church and Paul and his wife became members.

I was a Hyper-Calvinist

Mr Howe made it clear to me he was against what he called Hyper Calvinism which he stated was the position of the Gospel Standard Baptists. It was not possible to make head way with him, as he seemed insistent he was right. He was what is now called a Fullerite. He mocked the term “Dead Elect” a term that I understood to refer to the elect who were still dead in their trespasses and sins. I had no problem with this term and I had heard Mr Hill from Luton, use this from time to time.

Doctrinal Summery

By this time I had come to a fairly comprehensive knowledge if gospel truth. I had come to believe in the Sovereignty of God. The divinity of the Lord Jesus Christ and his eternal Sonship. The value and authority of the Authorized Version of the bible. The everlasting purposed of the trinity of persons in the Godhead Predestination. Election, Justification by imputed righteousness and the new birth. and a call to glorify God in declaring these things to others. And having knowledge of these things more than others abl’ed me to discern the many errors of many who too professed faith in Christ. I was shocked at the ignorance of so many.

I Hear Dr Martin Lloyd Jones Preach

I was encouraged by my friend to go to various Christian churches and on one occasion the church meeting at Long Crendon who had a visiting preached at their yearly anniversary service, he was Dr Martin Lloyd Jones.

Long Crendon Evangelical Church



Long Crendon Evangelical Church

This is where I heard Dr Martin Lloyd Jones preach This man had a real gift to preach and I could tell he understood doctrine, but he was never outspoken as to his belief in absolute predestination, although you could tell he would know these things and many more. I heard him also on another occasion as he preached also at the Ivanhoe Particular Baptist Church where Peter How had become the minister, and where Mr And Mrs Dix senior were members, along with Paul Aston and wife.

16 Getting a Job

This was a problem to me but I believed in God and I believed that I knew that through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ I would be provided for.

I had been dismissed from Radio Rentals due to my confession of stealing one of their colour Televisions from the old peoples home in Winslow. All I knew was how to fix televisions and I was qualified to City and Guilds 111. I decided to take the first Job offered me through the labour exchange; this was with a firm called Electroloid in Aylesbury. I was being employed as a wireman and on the interview the foreman called Dennis asked why I had left my former job. I was determined to be honest so I explained I had been dismissed for theft. At this he asked no more questions and I was given the job. I was also able to negotiate for one day off a week, without pay so I could finish off my college course.

I soon acquired a good knowledge of the equipment, which I wired up and began to read the circuit diagrams. My knowledge was such that I was able to fault find and develop test equipment.

Electrolloid were a company involved in making equipment for electro plating and the particular equipment I was involved in making was the controllers for the automatic dipping of parts that required plating. A microprocessor now would replace the whole control unit.

I was soon asked to go out on sight and trace faults on installed equipment. After six months I had been given the task of commissioning a controller in Southend. This involved doing what ever was necessary to get the new equipment operative. I spent a week away from home and successfully completed my task. I drew diagrams for the owner explaining how to fix things if things went wrong. The owner of the firm was so pleased he invited me to apply for a job as the maintenance engineer. However I declined the invitation, as I was not ready to leave Aylesbury as I had just found Christian friends. On reflection I perhaps should have gone after the job as I now realize Christians are all around not just in Aylesbury.

Acting Foolishly

I began to get bored and impatient when I wasn’t trouble shooting, which lead me to act foolishly. I began to experiment with charging lead acid car batteries and notice how the gasses were emitted from the battery when charged at a high rate of charge.

During my tea break I decided I wanted to collect these Hydrogen Gasses in a very large plastic bag. The size of which, would cover and over coat. I then charged the battery at the rate of 50 A/H and soon the bag was filled with gas. I thought what would happen if this ignited so decided on a way to do it. I took two match heads and wrapped thin wire around them and then connected this to two long pieces of insulated wire. I hid behind a large metal cabinet and connected the wires to the car battery. This acted as the detonator. The “Bang” was so loud, the building shock and the whole factor stopped. The foreman came looking to see what had happened. I was so embarrassed I came out from behind the cabinet like a scolded dog with my tail between my legs. The manager whose name was Tom, asked what was happening. Before he spoke my conscience slew me. I felt a fool and had dishonour Jesus. I simple said the hydrogen from the car battery had ignites but all was well. I told my work college all about it when they returned from break. I laughed about it but inwardly felt ashamed and had let Jesus down because I had acted foolishly.

Boredom, pride and self-seeking became a snare to me and I soon began to joke and mess about at work and I felt unclean.

Working For Self

I had worked for Electroloid for some time and I began to be dissatisfied with the repetitive work although the opportunities, which were opening up to me, were not identified by me. Or rather I did not welcome the fact this may involve me travelling away from home to work and missing my Christian friends.

At that time my brother was out of work and Jock Macallion who was replacing windows on a council estate in Richmondsworth had offered us work. So hastily I handed my notice in and my brother began to work together again. This work soon how ever came to an end but we soon found work in a building site as carpenters. We were paid £10 a day, which was good money and this lasted a few weeks. One day on the site the men laughed at me when I told them about the Lord Jesus Christ. It didn’t bother me but my brother for the first time ever stuck up for me and told them what I was saying was true.

Delivered from fire Morgan Sports Car

After this we decided we would have to earn money at welding and spraying cars. I had the equipment and know how so we hired a barn in Little Horward and set up in business. It was cold at that time of the year in January and so we heated the workshop with an oil-burning stove called a “Salamander”. We were supposed to use heating oil or paraffin but we used old engine oil.

This heater we called, “Sally the oil burning goose”, because of the shape of the chimney. This was a dangerous heater as I shall now relate and I believed God delivered me from a catastrophe.

Sally The Oil Burning Goose

One day I had in the workshop a Morgan sports car, which was in for re spray. It was worth £1000 (1972). I was working alone preparing this car with old Sally burning away merrily but she began to bubble and spit. This meant water was in the oil. Normally when this happened we would shut her down and re-lite her but on this occasion she would not have it, She was so hot she erupted and oozed out gallons of hot engine oil, which flooded the floor. This went up in flames. The flames leapt up to the ceiling burning the polythene ceiling stretched across the rafters. The

fumes and smoke and heat were so terrific I cannot describe the event and terror that I found my self in. What should I do? What could I do? All Alone in the middle of a field, in a wooden barn with a pool of leaping flames just about to burn down the Barn, and the Morgan car in side. My heart immediately motioned my soul to seek direct help from God. I had done all I could now I prayed aloud unto God for his intervention. I then left the barn with my back to it and my eye fell on an old damp tarpaulin big enough to unfold and use as a fire blanket. In I went using the opened damp tarpaulin as a blanket and threw it over the burning pool. The flames were put out and smoke filled the place. The flames reappeared a few time but I soon put them out. God had answered my prayer and the flames were put out. The barn was saved and our equipment. Here God gave me the wisdom and courage and initiative to apply a natural remedy to my dilemma. God had saved me yet again. Praise God.

About 15 minutes later Mike West and his wife arrived and the knights for a visit. They said I looked as white as a sheet. No wonder, so I explained all that had happened. From that time Mr. Knight inquired about getting insurance against such accidents but the insurance company refused it on the grounds it was too risky. Shortly after this I decided I would have to look for another kind of work.

I Find Work In Lowestoft

I found a job advertised in a national paper working as a faultfinder at the Pye TV factory at Fleet, Lowestoft. This was in the spring of 1972. I decided to take the job. I moved into a Y.M.C.A hostel leaving my home in Aylesbury and parents house. At the same time KK took a job at the same factory and both he and his wife moved to Lowestoft for a short while. They eventually decided not to stay.

The Elim Pentecostal Church

I felt very lonely but soon got involved in the Elim Pentecostal Church in the town. I visited the local Christian bookshop and ordered a book called, “The Sovereignty of God”, by Arthur Pink. It was soon made known amongst the young people that I was a Calvinist because the mother of one of the girls served me in the shop. I found this out one evening when I was attending the young peoples meeting and on that occasion the girl (about 20) said she thought I was a Calvinist as I had bought this book from the

bookshop. She then asked me directly saying was I a Calvinist.

I am a Calvinist I Speak To The Elders

I said yes I believed in the sovereignty of God. She was the daughter of one of the senior members of the Elim Church. Her response was YUK! And she turned around and walked away. I certainly felt hostility then. I decided I would speak to the elders of the church about some of the things that I had learned but the idea of God choosing some and leaving others was not received very well at that church. They also rejected the doctrine of Particular Redemption.

Whilst at the Y.M.C.A. I became very lonely and woke with a bad taste in my mouth. My mouth in fact tasted like the inside of a zoo keepers boot. This was a saying of Mike West. I decided to treat my self and ended up very ill. I began to take Andrews lived salts and at first this was very refreshing. It was so good I began to take it all the time, until one day at lunch I had stomach pains and when I tried to eat a salad then pain increased intensely. This set off a reaction, which lasted months and ended up me being treated for duodenal ulcers.

I Speak At The Factory

I remember speaking to one of the workers at the Lowestoft factory about Jesus Christ. I had told him all have sinned and come short of Gods standard. He did not accept he was a sinner as he had lived a good life and loved football. He asked me how going to a football match could possibly be wrong in the eyes of God and I gave a quick retort saying the scriptures say, “Go not with a crowd to do evil.” I was thinking of the football hooligans but at that he said I was ridiculous.

In the summer holiday of that year I returned to Aylesbury and decide to apply for a Job as a television service engineer, in Tring. This was at Mr. C. J. Ward & Son. I got the job and so I left the Pye Lowestoft Factory.

17 Pentecostal Holiness Bierton

When I returned to Aylesbury, the summer of 1972, I attended the opening services of the newly opened Pentecostal Holiness Church, in Bierton, Buckinghamshire. A Rev. Gordon Hills, from High Wycombe, was the preacher and was the pastor at an Elim Pentecostal Church.

Pentecostal Holiness Church Bierton



Pentecostal Holiness Church Bierton

Five points of Calvinism

There was a series of meetings for one-week and I soon realized that he too was a Calvinist as each night his theme in preaching was one of the five points of Calvinism: Total depravity, Unconditional election, Limited atonement, Irresistible grace, and Perseverance of the saints. I certainly felt encouraged and assumed Mr Harrison the minister of the Bierton Pentecostal Holiness Church were in agreement with these truths. At last I felt here was a place where truth and the baptism in the spirit went hand in hand. I was so encouraged.

I began to attend as a regular and got involved in the young people’s work and very soon we had far to many kids from of the street to deal with. I was hopeless at discipline and how to control them. There was a wonderful opportunity but I found I was out of my depth and did not cope. Not only that but no one else knew how to cope either so the youth work was closed.

Working for Mr C J Ward and Son

It was during the summer holidays when the Lowestoft Pye factory closed down that I looked for work nearer my home and I applied for an interview with C.J. Ward and Son, of Tring. When I arrived for the interview it was said by Mr Ward, the owner, the reason why I had got the job was because I was on time exactly. I had not planned it that way I just arrived at that time. I started work on the 14th August 1972. With a salary of £2000 per year. I was very thankful to God for His mercy to me.

City and Guilds London Institute Award

During my time working for C.J Ward and Son I

64

PENTECOSTAL HOLINESS BIERTON

Chapter17

completed my college learning a Luton College of Technology and was awarded a final Certificate In Radio and Television Servicing, including a Colour Television Endorsement. This was course 48 and was the highest qualification in that subject that was later to prove very useful.

This was where I worked. However none of the staff at C.J. Ward had time for Christian things. In fact I felt I was considered as less than nothing. I was ridiculed when I said in the bible God mentioned there was a Synagogue of Satan. I was not the only one treated with contempt however as they also treated the apprentice as a servant, a and often humiliated him, which he did not like.

Dr Gill’s Doctrinal Divinity

Whilst working for C. J Ward and Son the practice was to break for lunch between one and two o’clock and whilst all the staff returned to their homes for lunch, I was left alone for an hour each day during my break from work.

C J Ward and Son where I worked



C. J. Ward and Son. 72 Weston Road, Tring, Herts

It was during this time I studied the scriptures and read various Christian books. You might say, “I esteemed Thy word more than my necessary food.” I read “Mercies of a Covent God”, By John Kershaw, the life of John Warburton, Martin Luther’s “Bondage of the Will,” William Huntington’s “Kingdom of God taken by prayer”.

My Theological Training

I also read Dr John Gill’s Body of practical and Doctrinal Divinity. All of these books I had managed to obtain from America. It was my friend Peter Murray who recommended these theological books to me. I found this book very, very helpful and it was here that

I learned the extent of the doctrines of grace. It was my school of learning, which was to last a number of years.

In my reading I studied John Calvin’s Institutes of Christian Religion and in all I had to learn so many new words that my list covered several pages of full size paper. I had come a long way since reading comic and paperback books like James Bond, by Ian Fleming. All of these theological and spiritual books I now consider recommend reading. One excellent book was on by J.C. Philpot, The Eternal Son ship of Christ” along with an excellent sermon, “Winter Before Harvest”.

Michael Goes To Spain

At this time Michael had decided he wanted to live in Spain and so sold his house in Brackley and bought himself a Bobcat Catamaran. He lived in this boat in Denia and began to enjoy the delights of the Mediterranean sun.

Bobcat Catamaran



Michael’s 8 metre Bobcat Catamaran

Michael difficulties did not stop however as it wasn’t long before a hurricane hit the harbour in Denia and his Catamaran was dashed upon the rocks and one of the hulls was damaged. This happened however before the bad whether and he had invited mum and dad and me for a two week holiday. One side of the ship sank and after the hurricane cleared it was lifted out of the water with crane in order to repair the boat.

My Visit To Spain

My parents arrived and Michael found them accommodation on a friend boat and Michael collected me from Alacante Airport. I spent my first holiday

Chapter 17

PENTECOSTAL HOLINESS BIERTON

65

from work helping Michael repairing the hull on his catamaran. On that tip I took with me Martin Luther’s book, **The Bondage of the Will**, a translation from German into English by Erasmus Middleton

I Leave The Pentecostal Holiness Church

At this time I had become unsettled at the Pentecostal Church over a few issues that I did not know how to deal with. When explaining to the minister, a Mr. Harrison, that I wanted to leave because they did not teach the doctrines of grace. He said I ought not to leave because of a little bit of doctrine being different. This I found rather strange and did not agree.

A Denial of Imputed Righteousness

I found the issue with Mr E.C. Connet serious because he did not believe or teach that the righteousness of the Lord Jesus Christ was imputed to us for our Justification. Although he had been a help to me he was one of the teachers in the church.

Mr Harrison said he believed in the total depravity of man (not that he used these words) he said that there must have been a little bit of good, though ever so small in us for God to love us and want to save us.

I knew that God set his love upon us and we had need of mercy and there was no good thing in us to recommend us to God. God did not love us because we are lovable. I relised God set his love upon us (the elect) before the foundation of the world. God did not love every body like this.

Scripture Should Guide Us Not Feelings

I also found the issue of being led by feelings rather that the Word of God very awkward.

I began at that time to question many things and realized how easy it would be to be deceived if we were lead by our feelings and not the Word of God.

An example of this was shown to me when the pastor Mr Harrison informed the church that the Lord had shown him the bungalow, which he wanted him to have. This was in Windermere Close in Aylesbury. He said he knew it was the Lords will because he had offered the people a cut price and it was immediately accepted. This was the means, which Mr Harrison knew it was the Lords will.

The next thing the church was informed was that there were 17 clauses in the deed of purchase, which were unacceptable, and therefore the Lord did not want Mr Harrison the buy the property. This was an example of what I mean, the Lord no more told

Robert Harrison to buy the bungalow than he did to refrain from buying. I did not feel or believe that was being lead of the Holy Ghost.

Arminian Righteousness

Mr E.C. Connet was another man whom I respected and he attended the Pentecostal Church at Bierton. One day in conversation with him, about the things of God and what I was reading and learning, he turned on me and said it was doctrinally wrong to say the righteousness of Christ was imputed to us for our Justification. This was because each one of us had to have a righteousness of our own. Jesus had his own righteousness for himself and we to needed our own righteousness.

I was shocked and on every occasion I could I sought to reason with him, from scripture, that what I spoke about was true. I argued that as in Adam all Die so in Christ should all be made alive. So the imputation of sin (in Adam) also pointed to the imputation of righteousness (in Christ).

That as the sin and guilt of Adam (note: not the sin of Eve) brought about the imputation of sin to the whole of humanity so the righteousness of Jesus - his life and death brought about a righteousness that was imputed to all that believe. I stated that on this account only do we have right standing with God.

One Sunday morning he turned on me in anger and said all I did was talk about doctrine and never about the Lord.

I felt so wounded I just did not know what to do; I had always looked to this man for support and help. I groaned in spirit feeling so alone in this situation. I wondered how should I handle this.

These were the reasons for me leaving the Pentecostal Holiness Church at Bierton.

I Am Made Redundant

In 1973 during the economic crisis and the Governments imposition of a three-day week C. J Ward and Son fell upon hard times. And I received a letter dated 8th of Feb. 1974 informing me of my redundancy. This date became significant to me.

I was at home at the time of receiving this letter and when I realized I was unemployed I looked at the date of the letter. From this date I took courage, which helped me fight the haunting fears of not being able to get a job due to my past criminal record. The Judge Col. Tetley at the Aylesbury Magistrates Court had

given me a conditional discharge from punishment from the crimes I had committed that lasted for three years. This was on 9th February 1971. In other words my three years (to the day) was up. I could now seek work knowing I was free from condemnation under the law and had no need to inform a future employer of my past criminal record (Unless they asked).

It was as though my God and Father were saying to me don’t worry I will take care of you. I could now look for work knowing and feeling I was free with a clean sheet to start from.

Letter informing me of my redundancy
From: C.J. Ward & Son 8th February 1974
To: Mr. D Clarke
37 Finmere Crescents Aylesbury.

Dear David,
It is with deep distress the due to the present day economic position I greatly regret that we have to terminate your employment as from today week.

Rest assured this has no adverse reflection on your work or you present unfortunate illness, and will be more than pleased to give you any reference, which may be of help to you.

Should the economic position improve I would be pleased to consider any application you may wish to make at any time, and always pleased to see or help in any way possible.

Yours Sincerely,
C. J. Ward. Enclosed P.45 and N.I. Card.

Please note we have sent off your National Health certificate and have not deducted any money from this on next week’s remuneration.

The following reference was enclosed
To whom it may concern.

Mr. David Clarke has been in our employ since August 1972 and has always proved himself to be industrious, courteous, efficient and reliable worked whom we have been pleased to have on our Staff. Since being with us he has taken advantage of Day College to obtain his City and Guilds endorsement to add to his previous knowledge and certificates. We can thoroughly recommend him for any similar position and wish him well in such. We regret that the present government and country unrest and economic position leaves us with great regret to dispense with his services.

C. J Ward.

18 Working for Granada TV Rentals

It was within two weeks of my redundancy that I had obtained a new job, working for Granada TV Rentals, as a service technician.

I started work for Granada TV Ltd. on 25/2/1974 being paid £37.27 per week. This car had a company logo printed on the side of the vehicle so one knew for whom I worked. I say this because this became a point of issue at a later date. I also was granted £3.72 per week as a vehicle allowance.

I Am Promoted To Service Manager

Within 6 months of working at Granada I was promoted to workshop manager and I found the work very challenging and rewarding. I found working for Granada a fresh breath of air and got on real well. The only problem was I worked too hard and was inefficient which led to a real case of depression, which I will relate later.

Granada TV Rentals Aylesbury



Michael Nicholson left, David. Phil Reason middle, Tony Burnham and Mrs Royce-Taylor

My visit to Northern Ireland

I was encouraged to have a break from work and in July 1974 I was invited by Owen McCrystal to visit his home in Northern Ireland, He lived in a town called Omagh in County Tyrone. Owen had a television business called, “Crystal T.V.”. He started his business by bringing a van load of second hand T.V. sets from England to the town of Omagh and began to rent them out and repair washing machines and TV’s. I was invited out to teach one of his employee’s, called Ivan. I taught him how Colour

Chapter 18
T.V.’s work. Owen maintained he was a genius as he could fix TV sets without knowing how they worked. He maintained any one could repair a T.V. set if they knew how they worked so he must be a genius as he could repair them not knowing how they worked. Owen’s wife was a Catholic and I think they viewed my religious beliefs with scepticism.

I was unaware of all the conflicts in Ireland and completely ignorant. I had heard people speak evil of Ian Paisley and all I knew was that the Rev. Ian Paisley had preached this sermon called, “Second Mile Religion” and I knew from that sermon he was a man of God and preached the truth about the Lord Jesus Christ. I decided on my way through Belfast I would stop the night and visit the Martyrs Memorial Church where Ian Paisley was the pastor the next day.

Martyrs Memorial in Belfast



Martyrs Memorial Church building, Ravens hill Road Belfast

I Seek Ian Paisley

When I arrived in Belfast I was amazed to see all the soldiers with guns checking every body and watching out for trouble. It was the 12th of July 1974. When I arrived on the streets in Belfast I noticed all the shops and doorways were barred up and the streets very clear with soldiers on every corner. I was unaware of what the 12th of July was all about. It was the end of the day and a lot of parades and marches had gone on that day. It was a day of celebration to some people. I ended knocking on a guest house door to find two ladies running this guest house. I had arrived unannounced with a large suspicious suite case in my hand from England. I said would like to stay the night and asked if they knew where Martyrs Memorial Church building was. They looked at me “gone out” and asked me what was an English man

Chapter 18
T.V.’s work. Owen maintained he was a genius as he could fix TV sets without knowing how they worked. He maintained any one could repair a T.V. set if they knew how they worked so he must be a genius as he could repair them not knowing how they worked. Owen’s wife was a Catholic and I think they viewed my religious beliefs with scepticism.

I was unaware of all the conflicts in Ireland and completely ignorant. I had heard people speak evil of Ian Paisley and all I knew was that the Rev. Ian Paisley had preached this sermon called, “Second Mile Religion” and I knew from that sermon he was a man of God and preached the truth about the Lord Jesus Christ. I decided on my way through Belfast I would stop the night and visit the Martyrs Memorial Church where Ian Paisley was the pastor the next day.

Martyrs Memorial in Belfast



Martyrs Memorial Church building, Ravens hill Road Belfast

I Seek Ian Paisley

When I arrived in Belfast I was amazed to see all the soldiers with guns checking every body and watching out for trouble. It was the 12th of July 1974. When I arrived on the streets in Belfast I noticed all the shops and doorways were barred up and the streets very clear with soldiers on every corner. I was unaware of what the 12th of July was all about. It was the end of the day and a lot of parades and marches had gone on that day. It was a day of celebration to some people. I ended knocking on a guest house door to find two ladies running this guest house. I had arrived unannounced with a large suspicious suite case in my hand from England. I said would like to stay the night and asked if they knew where Martyrs Memorial Church building was. They looked at me “gone out” and asked me what was an English man

67
was doing visiting Belfast during all these troubles. I said I wanted to hear Ian Paisley preach. I said I had heard him preach on a record and he preached the gospel. They said they were Catholics and they would be too afraid to go and hear him preach even though they would like to. They made me welcome and I had a pleasant stay learning a bit about the troubles in Northern Ireland

Suspicious Looking Suit Case

In the morning as I carried my suspicious looking suit case through the streets of Belfast I had occasion to ask a milkman the way to Martyrs Memorial Church and he replied I was in the wrong part of Belfast to be asking directions to that place and directed me along a certain road. I realized this must have been a Catholic area but I was really so naive I did not know what was going on at all.

The Wrong Part of Belfast

I ended up in a Newspaper shop asking directions and my eye caught the picture of a man called “Carson”, on a post card. To make conversation I asked the shopkeeper who was this person Carson and she spoke scathingly to me say I ought not to ask such questions like that. I then realized I must have been in the wrong area.

I arrive at the Martyrs Memorial Church and Dr Paisley was preaching. It was a very large building with figureheads of the martyrs all around the building. Dr Paisley preached faithfully the truth about Jesus Christ and could not understand why people should oppose him like I had heard. In that meeting I heard no mention of Politics I only heard about Jesus Christ and what he had done for sinners. I concluded it must be his tone of voice or way of speaking I felt people must not be listening to his message but rather the tone of voice. I could imagine him speaking against the enemies of the truth using his tongue like a “Bastard file”. After the meeting I asked Dr Paisley to direct me to some one who could help me get to Omagh, as I was a visitor. I finally got transport that day to Omar and ended up joining a group of Christians, from the Free Presbyterian Church in Omar. I was given an orange sash and joined their march along the streets and lanes of Omar. We then went to a meeting and the Preacher was Rev. William Macray.

I had a good time in Omar staying at my friend’s home. Owen did not believe the gospel, he was a

68

WORKING FOR GRANADA TV RENTALS

Chapter 18

nominal Roman Catholic and we had long talks about the things of God. He employed a man called Ivan who confided in me that he was a Christian but he did not like to say too much to Owen as it might not go down too well for him and Owen could give him a hard time.

The pace of life seems so much slower than that in Aylesbury and every one I spoke to seemed to have a knowledge as to what it means to be, “born again” or to “be saved”. Even Owen and his wife, who were Catholics, knew these terms and used them. It was not like this in England. I had a good time in Ireland and would like to go again.

We Go To The Reformation Conference



Isaac And Esther Crying Their Eyes Out
Dr Ian Paisley says they were tears of repentance
This meet we televised a may be viewed online at the following links. (Click below)
[Dr Ian Paisley Preaches At Hounslow](#) (click to view)

A few years later my wife and I went to hear Dr Ian Paisley preach in London with our two children Isaac and Esther to a Reformation Conference, on 14th May 1983 in order to hear Dr Ian Paisley preach.

At this meeting Isaac and Esther sat on Dr Ian Paisley knee and cried their eyes out as we took a photograph.

We Employ Michael Nicholson

When I returned from my holiday we had a vacancy for a technician so in my capacity of workshop manager I contacted Michael Nicholson, of C J Ward, asking him if he wanted a job with Granada. He was the apprentice of C J Ward, and whilst working for them he told me he wanted to leave as soon as he could. He was fed up with being treated second rate. He hated having to stub out John Wards cigarette ends.

He came to Granada and passed all the tests and was accepted. He joined Granada as a Technician in October 1974.

I am Poached by C. J Ward and Son

It was in October 1974 that I received a call from Mr. C J Ward asking me if I wanted a job.

I went for the interview and asked all kinds of questions as this company had recently made me redundant. I explained my problem about being a Christian and having the three-year conditional discharge over Mr Ward and he seemed sympathetic saying he had not realized this at all. I told him about the Lord Jesus Christ and what he had done for me. He said had I told him these things before he may have been able to help.

I was offered £50 per week (I was only getting £40 a week at Granada) plus a company car - with a day off - I was really tempted. When he offered me £60 per week and would I start straight away and not work my week’s notice I said yes, thinking this was the right thing to do. I had never had things so good. He wanted me to make a decision there and then, on the spot, without hesitation.

I thanked God for the promotion and this offer and Mr Ward seemed pleased as though he had won a prize. Here I was being offered £1000 per year more than I was getting at Granada.

After the interview I felt and asked the question was it the right thing to do and thought about my boss Tony Burnham - how would he cope? He had been good to me and got me the promotion at Granada. I then had second thoughts.

After thought and prayer I felt I should not take up the job so I rang Mr Ward saying I had decided against working for him.

The following is his letter, which shows I had

Chapter 18

obviously upset him. His letter certainly caused me concern so he got my reply.

Letter from Mr. Ward

Dear David,

I have to thank you for your letter dated 8th October, I have personally not written before as I have been trying to reconcile your actions with your religious beliefs, to this “God which spoke to you”.

You spent all one Friday afternoon asking about four pages of questions, I began to think it was myself asking for a job, which apparently were answered to your satisfaction and you agreed to take the position at a wage well above your actual capabilities but I was willing to accept, capabilities which in part we paid for you to acquire, you shook hands with me to seal the bargain and when I asked if you required a contract you paid me the compliment of saying “No your word is good enough Mr Ward”. What a pity that I cannot now pay the same compliment to you, as within 24 hours you had broken our agreement. One does not expect this from religious people of conviction; your religion is obviously different to mine. Just how is this compatible with seducing our apprentice away from us before he had completed his contract for which he so willingly, and at his own request signed for.

Yours Sincerely,

C J Ward.

My reply to Mr Ward

This reply from Mr Ward irritated me and I felt he was acting in spite so I wrote my reply 31/11/74

Dear Mr Ward,

I am sorry to hear you seem so bitter about my break of contract with you. I wrote firstly to apologize for inconveniencing you and wasting your time and money. My conscience had troubled me over saying I would start work for you and then turning your offer down.

What more can I say I know me saying sorry will not undo what has happened all I can do is apologize. Please accept my apology.

Surely you realized the reason why I asked you so many questions was because it was such a major decision I had to make. You wanted an immediate answer straight away so I had to weigh all the facts so to act in my own interest. Just as you acted in your own interest when you dismissed me before.

I am most grateful for your efforts in supplementing

69

WORKING FOR GRANADA TV RENTALS

my training, which I realize, cost you money also. But Mr. Ward you did sack me I never intended to leave. And therefore I am under no obligation what so ever to you in that respect.

I did explain to you about Michael the last time we met. I hid nothing from you.

Whilst I worked with Michael he told me as soon as his apprenticeship was finished he was leaving you. It was under this impression I contacted him regarding working for Granada. I thought his contract finished this summer gone.

I never intended that he should break any contract. I explained to him that you had always treated me fairly and that he must make his own decisions. It was well within your own ability to freely agree to dissolve the contract without aggravation to you or Michael. I am sure Michael would not have left unless you had agreed to dismiss him.

As to enticing and seducing him away and your religion being different from mine on this point it seems that is what you attempted to do with me when asked me to leave Granada without giving a week’s notice.

Your last point I admit my religion is different to yours.

The Lord God whom you speak against is my Lord and God. He is your creator and both you and me are accountable to him alone for our actions, words and thoughts. If He chooses to start a work of change in such a sinful person as my self and you speak against his work it is He you defy and not I. The Lord Jesus Christ came into the world to save his people from their sins. Not for the sake of the righteous. Only sick people need a doctor. I am the sinner and am in need of his forgiveness and mercy.

However I don’t like upsetting people I hope you receive my answer to your letter and consider what I say. I don’t wish to be on bad terms with you as I like you and admire your business ability.

Yours Sincerely,

David

Clarke.

Shortly after this Mr Ward was in serious difficulties, which those that know him will know all about.

Victor Prince The Crombie Over Coat

“In all thy ways acknowledge him and he shall direct thy paths”

The following extract is taken from my loose-leaf diary and relates to a remarkable experience, which

demonstrates the wonder and way of the Spirit of God leading and teaching a believer.

On Friday, 30/8/74, it was my day off from work and during the day I was rebuilding our garage roof at 37 Finmere Crescent, Aylesbury. During the day I was thinking about the way God had dealt with me and led me thus far. I realized that each one that was child of God was special and God dealt with them personally. Each person had his own peculiar special work of God in his or her own life. This work was a personal work done in no other it was special to them. All were saved, being involved in a common salvation, but the work of God was peculiar and special to that individual. In this frame of mind I began to wonder about a particular trouble I had caused a certain Mr Victor Prince, many years earlier.

Mr Prince was a tailor and some years previously (about 5 years) I had employed him to make a Crombie over coat when I had just been released from Borstal. It was to cost £45 and I gave him £ 5 deposit to start the work. At that time I was living in London doing Government training course learning about Television servicing. My brother was due to be released from prison on home leave. He had a coat made by some one a year previously and on his home leave he came to see the coat before it was finished. After hearing how long it had been in the making he said it was taking far too long and he persuaded me to tell Mr Prince it was not good enough. He then picked holes in the coat in front of Mr Price and told him top stick the coat. Later on the telephone we were both nasty to Mr Prince. He thought I was saying I could not afford it and offered to keep it until I could. It was made especially for me and really would nod do any one else. I left it with Mr Price and thought no more of it until then when I was on the garage roof.

I felt bad about the way I had treated him and would have apologized to him if I could.

Contemplation On Divine Predestination

My mind was thinking upon the subject of predestination and reasoned that God had planned every thing in creation to bring about a display of his glory and Grace in Jesus Christ. I was a person created by God being responsible and accountable to God having a definite purpose for my existence. I was alive and active but God was working in and through me. I had been predestined to obtain salvation by Jesus Christ. This work of salvation being the means of displaying God’s love, mercy and grace towards me. It was not my free will that saved me but Gods free grace that made me willing in the day of His power. Therefore glory was due to God the Father, Son and Holy Spirit.

Feeling wretched over the way I treated Mr Prince I had resolved in my mind to pay the money I owed Mr Prince and apologized to him if ever I was to meet him again.

It was one week later on a Sunday the 8 /9/74 that I saw the amazing hand of God at work. Mrs Knight of Mount Street spoke to me on the way home from the Pentecostal Church at Bierton. She said her and Ken had met someone they had not seen for a long time. I stopped her speaking and told her it was Mr. Prince. She was amazed and wondered how I knew. They had met Mr. Prince in Aylesbury and he had though of asking Ken to repair his TV as it had gone wrong. They said perhaps they would ask me to do it and if he remembered me. He certainly did. Mrs Knight was able to inform him of me becoming a Christian and he left it to them to make arrangements to get his TV fixed.

I had not mentioned a thing to Mrs Knight and there was no way of this happening by chance. God had done it.

The first Sunday after this we all went to visit Mr Prince but he was out at a harvest thanks-giving service at a Methodist church. So we made arrangements to go on 18th of September. At first I did not know what to say as I was extremely embarrassed so I said very little. I soon repaired the TV and then spoke to Mr. prince about what had happened. I apologized and offer to pay the money I owed him quite forgetting about the coat.

It turned out he still had the coat even after several moves and the money owing was £38. All I was asked to pay was £34 so I paid this by cheque (Cheque number 183901). I now had my coat; it is dark blue Crombie over coat and still have it today.

19 Bierton Strict and Particular Baptists

I felt lead and right to leave the Pentecostal Church and attend the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church. I felt I could no longer in conscience stay or continue at the church even though I had affection for all the people there when there was a company of people across the road at the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church. They held to and professed

the very gospel I had received. From that time I commenced to attend as a member of the congregation at this cause of truth.

Distinguishing Doctrines of Grace

A friend, who lived in Wendover, Mr Alan Benning, informed me that the Strict and Particular Baptist Church at Bierton, believed the doctrines of grace and that a Mr J Hill, a Gospel Standard minister (of Luton Ebenezer Church) was engaged to preach on an anniversary service in the near future. I was keen to hear him preach. So I began to attend their week night prayer meeting.

My hopes had been raised that I would hear the truth about Gods free sovereign grace for it was reported that Mr. Hill was a Gospel Standard minister. I was given to believe I would hear those truths preached by William Huntington, William Gadsby and John Kershaw. I had read their autobiographies and found their writings very helpful during my time at C. J. Ward and Son, and was encouraging by them as they gave all the praise and glory to Jesus Christ the Lord and not to man.

I started to go the Bierton church just before Mr Hill preached that anniversary year on the Wednesday night prayer meeting, and sat at the back of the chapel. At that time I had no idea of the manor of service or church government nor of any other ministers engaged to preach on a Lords Day or weeknight services.

Denham’s Hymns

The folk at Bierton used Denham’s collection of hymns called “The Saint’s Melody” and the substances of these hymns were very pleasing to me. Even the singing pace was different to all the other churches I had attended being that much slower.

Miss Bertha Ellis would play the foot-peddled organ and the hymnbook used was Denham’s Collection 19th century. The hymn singing was about half the speed of the hymns sung at other churches and the words of the hymns were wonderful and glorifying to God. The stile of meeting was generally Hymn, reading from the scripture (Authorized version King James), Hymn, Prayer, hymn, Sermon, finally hymn and then a closing prayer. A short while after I began to attend on a regular basis I was asked by Mr. King if I would engage in prayer when asked too. It was the custom for men to pray the women would keep silent.

I did engage in prayer and after the meeting Mr

King asked me kindly to pray in future in reverent language and address God in terms of thee and thou rather then you and your because it could offend people. That was there custom.

I went away feeling offended thinking all kinds of thoughts. I was upset thinking what difference does the language make etc. but I bowed to their request and adopted their form of speech in order not to offend. I now find it difficult, to day, to break from that habit of using thee and thou. I.e. Reverent language when addressing God.

Bierton Baptist Chapel



Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Chapel. The Church was founded in 1831

The Doctrines of the Gospel

I was convinced the Word of God was infallible and the only rule of conduct and religious practice. I believed the scripture taught us of a sovereign true and living God. That though God be one God, the only self existent being, one in essence and nature, there subsists in the divine essence three divine persons; The Father, Son and Holy Ghost. I believed that person were truly and properly God by nature and that from all eternity. I believed that the divine nature was not divided but one in essence and each divine person possessing the whole of the divine essence.

I believed the scripture taught the Lord Jesus Christ is that only begotten son of the Father full of grace and truth, the only saviour of (Gods elect) lost sinners. He being one person yet having two natures. Being God from all eternity the divine Son of the Father and by nature truly God. Yet at the incarnation he took to himself that which he was not; our human nature and so was truly man. Hence the glorious complex person

of Jesus Christ is the Christ that should come into the world to save sinners. I believed that His glory was veiled during his time of humiliation.

This Jesus Had Called Me

I believed this same Jesus had called me by his grace directly and made him self-known to me, outside of the circles of any Christian church. It was he whom I sought and believed in when I went and heard Mr. Hill preach at the Bierton Anniversary Service he preached the distinguishing doctrines of grace very clearly. At that time I did not know many preachers who preached these things except, I had heard I heard Dr. Ian Paisley, on a record and that sermon was called “Second mile religion”.

I had also heard Dr. Martin Lloyd Jones preach but he seemed not to emphasize the distinguishing doctrines of Grace, although it was evident that he believed in the sovereignty of God.

The churches I had attended, until this time, around Aylesbury and district appeared to only know of Arminian doctrine and held to a the false doctrine of universal love towards all mankind and a general atonement as distinct to particular redemption.

Not All Preaching Was Good

Not all the preaching at Bierton was good as we had a range of visiting ministers. Some times I would groan and suffer 45 minute of difficult things to listen too. Very few were Gospel Standard ministers and some were opposed to the Gospel Standard position, they often liked to refer to the 1689 confession, a confession that I soon realized was in error. The Scottish Free Presbyterians Churches boasted of their 1646 confession as the best. Again I soon learned that this too was in error. Some of these preachers used notes whilst others did not. Not that that helped, as some I felt would have benefited from notes to preach. Some preachers would not use notes and speak as they felt lead too. But I realized that too was no guarantee they could be listened too.

Miss Ruth Ellis

She was one of our members and she was a gem of a person and always ready to share a word or hymn. On several occasion mid week we would visit her and she would read from her books stories about choice Christian experience.

Unfortunately Ruth died and she ended her days at Bethesda Home in Harpendon.

Mr and Mrs Gurney were members and their son John attended our church as a member of the congregation. I noticed a plaque over the fireplace of their home and it read, “A Sabbath well spent brings a week of content but a Sabbath profaned, what err may be gained is a sure for runner of sorrow. I noticed this, as when I looked at the churches original trust deed there was no mention of Sabbath day keeping. It was only brought up in the spurious set of article presented to me when seeking membership of the Church.

Miss Bertha Ellis

She was a mother in Israel and looked after most of the visiting ministers and played the organ at our meetings, giving way to visiting people who were also able to ply such as John Snuggs and Mr Dix from Ivanhoe.

Miss Bertha Ellis informed me that the church was formed in 1831 and opened by the son of John Warburton. She had the minutes of that meeting which were signed in his own hand and the deed of trust upon which the church was formed. These articles of religion were very good and acceptable.

After my warm reception I was looking forward to hear Mr Hill of Luton preach at the anniversary service.

It was good to hear Mr Hill preached and he invited me and Alan Benning to his home in Luton and I spent time with him at his home.

Church Anniversary Services

During this time I was able to take time out of my work and attend the various Gospel Standard Baptist church anniversary services, which were held by other causes of truth. And it was because I was working for Granada TV rentals that I was a blessing because I was able to take time out of work to attend the various church anniversary services in our area. Had I been working for C.J. Ward and Son this would have proved impossible? I really looked forward to these meetings and seeing the various friends of our church and I often took with me some of the members of ours. These churches that we visited were, Linslaid, Prestwood, Barton Le clay, Waddesdon Hill, and Keeche’s Chapel, in Winslow.

We also had our own anniversary services and visitors from the different churches in our area and from a far who came to our meetings.

It was at our anniversary meetings that I learned

not every one was in favor of the Gospel Standard Articles of Religion. In particular Mr Dix senior expressed it and his wife (parents of Kenneth Dix the Pastor of Dunstable Baptist Church) that they opposed the articles and some, of the ways these Strict Baptists. I felt uneasy about hearing such things but kept them to my self.

Linslaid Strict and Particular Baptist Church



Linslaid Strict and Particular Baptist Chapel

This is where Mr Collier was the pastor. During this time Mr Alan Benning informed me of the Linslaid Strict and Particular Baptist, which was a listed Gospel Standard church, and from that time were we able to visit from time to time.

On one anniversary service we went to hear a Mr Andrew Randall’s who apparently had been involved with the Brethren and I could tell from our conversations that he was aware of doctrinal issues of the day, and he had a very serious disposition.

Waddesdon Hill Strict Baptist Chapel

Another favourite anniversary was at Waddesdon Hill, where Mr James Hill was the preacher. This was a Gospel Standard cause and was founded as a Particular baptist church in 1752.

Waddesdon Hill Strict and Particular Baptist Chapel where we heard Mr Hill, Pastor of Luton Ebenezer church, preached. and Mr Collier. I use to take Bertha and Ruth Ellis, Alan Benning and Grace knight to these meetings. I remember these meetings with fondness

Waddesdon Hill Gospel Standard Chapel



Waddesdon Hill Gospel Standard Cause

Benjamin Keeche’s Chapel

At Winslow

At this time, on one occasion each year, an anniversary meeting was held at Ketch’s Chapel, the oldest place of non-conformist place of worship in England and Dr Ian Paisley was the preacher. I attended this meeting for a number of years afterward and was greatly blessed and heard Mr Collier from Linslaid and Mr Ramsbottom from Luton preached at those meetings.

Benjamin Keeche’s Chapel at Winslow



Keeche’s Chapel

Benjamin Keeche’s Chapel Winslow where I heard Dr Ian Paisley, Mr Collier and Mr Ramsbottom preached.



Prestwood Gospel Standard

Another one of the local churches that we attended on their anniversary services (that is Alan Benning, Bertha and Ruth Ellis and Mrs Grace Knight) was the Prestwood Strict and Particular Baptist Church. This church was a Gospel Standard listed Church.

Prestwood Strict and Particular Baptist Chapel. I was here that I first heard Mr Sparling-Tyler preach.

Barton Le Clay Hope Chapel

It was at this chapel that I took both Bertha and Ruth Elis to hear Stanley Delves and on another occasion to hear Jessie Delves preach.

Meeting Other Christians and Friends

During this time I met John Snuggs from Eaton Bray who had come to work in Aylesbury. He came to our wee knight prayer meetings at Bierton and he introduced me to some of his friends who attended the young peoples meeting that were held once a month at Bethel Strict Baptist Church in Luton. Mr Ramsbottom would give a talk or lecture and afterward we were invited to the Bethesda Rest Home at Harpendon where we were given refreshments and able to meet and talk to other people from the various churches in the district. I found these meetings very helpful to meet other Christians.

Excessive Work And Depression

At this time I was working for Granada TV Rentals and within a few months had been promoted to Workshop manager. I thoroughly enjoyed the job but I found I spent more and more time thinking about work than any thing else. I was taken up with work.

The things of God paled. I went to the meetings but I could not shut off from work.

I soon realized I was not a good manager and found myself doing all the work. I worked long hours and my days off. Although I got the job done and we were the best branch in the district it was all at my expense.

After several months of this intense work I began to find I could not cope with the stress the job demanded and went though horrifying bouts of agony and fear of not being able to cope. I began to think I was experiencing flash backs from the bad trip on LSD. This time how ever it was in the cold light of day with no LSD etc. I was so ill I wanted the ground to open up and swallow me thinking this would remove me from all the pain I was going through.

Heavens as Brass.

My manager Tony Burnham, who was not a Christian had noticed a change in me as at one time, when I first began to work there, I continued my habit of reading during my lunch time break and he noticed me reading John Calvin’s book on Daniel.

Due to my excessive workload I forsook my devotions and worked all the hours I could.

One afternoon on the garage roof at Mount Street I cracked up and realized I could not cope any more. I couldn’t make decisions I could not think straight every problem was too much to face.

I ended up resigning from the manager’s job and becoming a normal technician. This ended in me feeling a failure and depression set in that lasted about 3 years. It was during this time I learned that the Christian life could be very painful, which caused me to seek deliverance and rely totally on the God of all grace. I found my self-feeling very lonely and wondered if I would ever find a wife and marry.

I found the hymns and preaching at the Bierton Strict Baptist Church very helpful. In particular one hymn by John Newton I recall was most helpful.

John Newton’s Hymn

I asked the Lord that I might grow
In faith, and love, and every grace;
Might more of His salvation know,
And seek more earnestly His face

‘Twas He who taught me thus to pray,
And He, I trust, has answered prayer;
But it has been in such a way,
As almost drove me to despair.

I hoped that in some favoured hour,
At once He’d answer my request;
And, by His love’s constraining power,
Subdue my sins, and give me rest.

Instead of this, He made me feel
The hidden evils of my heart,
And let the angry powers of hell,
Assault my soul in every part.

Yea, more, with His own hand
He seemed Intent to aggravate my woe;
Crossed all the fair designs I schemed,
Blasted my gourds, and laid me low.
“Lord, why is this?” I trembled cried; “
Wilt Thou pursue Thy worm to death?”

“Tis in this way,” the Lord replied,
“I answer prayer for grace and faith.”
“These inward trials I employ,
From self and pride to set thee free;
And break thy schemes of earthly joy,
That thou mayst seek thy all in me.”

20 I Join the Bierton Church

After a short while I wrote to the church expressing my wish to join the church at Bierton, as I believed that I had that responsibility having experience the new birth and being baptized. I reasoned that I ought to support the cause of Christ at Bierton.

I was received into church membership at the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church on 8th January 1976.

A problem arose because in the articles of Religion that were given to me were not those listed in the trust deed of 1831 and I could not subscribe to them. There were two articles that I could not subscribe too.

Mr Hill of Luton Ebenezer helps

I discussed my concerns and misgivings with Mr Hill, the Pastor of Luton Ebenezer church, who fully understood my concerns and after looking at the original articles of Religion , for the Bierton Church, it was realized that there was no record as to how these articles had come into existence. So the church was bound to be subject to their original articles of religion. These were listed in their trust deed of 1831 and these did not contain these items I could not in

conscience subscribe too.
The church was please to allow me to join them upon my confession faith and my acceptance of the original Articles of Religion, and not the spurious ones. There was in fact no record of how these other articles of faith came to be in use.

Articles of Religion: The problem

Article 12. We believe that Christ has set apart a day of rest, to be kept holy, and for his honour and glory, which is the first day of the week, commonly called Sunday, Mark 2 27. Acts 16 13. Hebrew 4, 9.

I did not believe that was true or that these scripture taught that.

Article 16. We believe all infants who die in their infancy go to heaven by virtue of the death of Christ. Matth 19 13, 14&15.

Again I could not say I believed this. I grant if they do go to heaven then is must be by virtue of the death of Jesus. These scriptures quoted do not teach this view.

A Church Member Dies

Sadly, soon after I joined the church at Bierton, the husband of Mrs Evered died, who was a church member, and I was invited to the family funeral. I was later invited to the family home in Aylesbury and on that occasion I was asked to share my testimony, at the family meeting, after the funeral to which, I felt privileged to do. It was here that I met the Groom family, who were members of the Prestwood Strict Baptist church and had moved to Brighton.

I Am Introduced To Mr Sperling-Tyler

I had previously met Pastor Mr Sperling Tyler, at a meeting at the Prestwood Strict Baptist Chapel, in 1975, when Mrs Evered introduced me to Mr Sparling-Tyler, soon during my early days attending the Bierton Church. On that occasion Mr Tyler was very gracious and asked me had I found the lord Jesus Christ as my personal saviour to which I replied, “ No but rather He had found me”.

I am introduced to Pastor Frank L. Gosden



Mr Frank L Gosden Gilead Chapel Brighton

Mr Frank L. Gosden was the Pastor of the Church at Gilead where Mr and Mrs Groom were in attendance and they wanted me to meet their pastor. Frank L. Gosden also pastored churches at Heathfield (1939-1957) and Gilead, Brighton (1959-1980). Mr. Gosden once said that he believed a twofold test could be applied to every preacher: Will the things he speaks be things that will matter when we come to die? And will the things he speaks be a help to a poor, broken-hearted sinners?

Gilead Chapel Brighton



Gilead Chapel Brighton

Mr and Mrs Groom and Mrs Evered arranged for me to visit Mr Gosden, in order for me to share with him my experience of conversion and I was very honoured to do this. We spent the afternoon together, at his very modest home, and he gave me a gift when I was leaving. It was his very own personal copies of Dr. John Gill’s commentaries of the whole bible, in 6 volumes, for which I felt very privileged to receive. And this became my source of instruction ever since. At that time I have obtained a very old copy of William Huntington’s book entitled the Everlasting Love of God towards His Elect. On reading this it became very

clear that the Arminians were in the dark and I felt if only I could talk to them then the opposition that I had experienced from those that I had met at Lowestoft would surely disappear and the news be received with gladness. Mr Groom commented on my reading the book expressing he felt it very deep reading. I can recommend this to any one to read.

Before Mr Frank L. Gosden was the pastor of Gilead church in Brighton Mr J K Popham (1847 to 1947) was their pastor who was the former editor of the Gospel Standard.

For 55 years pastor of Gilead Chapel Brighton. Editor of the Gospel Standard from 1905 -1937. Besides being a minister of the gospel he was a gifted writer and theologian. He was called upon to deal with many controversial issues of the times. His booklet Spiritual Counsel to the Young is still in print as are many of his sermons. A book on the life of letters of J.K. Popham was written by J.H. Gosden

Under the title ‘Valiant For Truth’



James Kidwell Popham 1847-1937

A Visitor James from Scotland

On one of these occasions we had a visitor from the group meeting at the Bethlehem Meeting hall, at Penn, where John Metcalf, was their Pastor. I learned one or two things from our visitor, who was called James. He was a former Scotts Presbyterian and I think from the Free Presbyterian Church of Scotland whom I learned were renowned Calvinists. These I learned and opposed the Gospel Standard views of the none-offer of the Gospel and also the view that the Law of Moses was not the rule of life for the believer. They held to a view of a free offer of Christ to all men, a view I could not go along with, as Christ died for the elect only. Christ was to be preached to the entire world but He was not on offer.

The Law of Moses

Not The Rule Of Life For The Believer

Also I knew that the Law could not be the rule of life for the believer because of their union to him in His death and resurrection whereby they are delivered from the Law of sin and death and had rule of life which was the whole gospel of Christ the perfect law of liberty.

James informed me that the Presbyterians were against John Metcalf and his teaching because he too like William Huntington taught, like the Gospel Standard article convey that the Law was not the rule of life for the believer but rather the gospel was. This I agreed was the truth.

James came to our weeknight prayer meeting; his name was James and he later informed me that he wanted to hear Mr Sparling-Tyler preach, who was the Pastor of the church meeting at the Dicker. So I agreed to take him one Lord’s Day. He had a problem though, because I worked for Granada TV Rentals and I had a company vehicle which, had the name of my company written on the side of the car. This was an embarrassment to him as he was acutely aware of the disapproval of many, who were opposed to any church member who had a television set. He wanted me to park the vehicle away from the chapel car park, so as not to show we were connected with the chapel. I felt slightly irritated with this mode of thinking but was sensitive enough to know how much he felt embarrassed, so we parked my company car out of the way. We then heard Mr Tyler speak in the Morning, afternoon and evening. Meetings of the church. It was here that I met the son of Mr Tyler and his wife who both attended the Linslaid Strict Baptist church.

Television A Concern For Many

In respect to the television I began to realize this had become an issue, not only amongst the Strict Baptists but also the Brethren. I had reason to consider the whole matter at a later date,

Zoar Strict Baptist Chapel



Zoar Strict Baptist Chapel, Lower Dicker

This was built in 1837 and enlarged in 1874. There is an extensive graveyard on three sides

Not All Preaching at Bierton Good

Our visiting preaches came from various local and far away places and only a few were from Gospel Standard causes, let alone gospel standard listed ministers. As I recall the names of some of those who visited us and preached, we shall see who were from Gospel Standard causes and who were listed ministers.

Our Ministers were:

Mr Hill, Luton, Pastor of Ebenezer Luton and one of our Trustee’s GS
Mr Collier, Pastor Linslaid Bethel Strict and Particular Baptist GS
Mr Goode, Pastor, Dunstable Baptist

Mr Martin Hunt, Colnebrook Gospel Standard
Mr King, minister, Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist (Bierton Trustee)
Mr Martin White Colnebrook
Mr C. A Wood, Pastor Croydon, Strict and Particular Baptist GS

Mr Hope, Pastor Reading, Strict and Particular Baptist

Mr Howard Sayers, minister, Watford Strict and Particular Baptist GS
Mr Crane, minister, Lakenheath Strict and Particular
Mr Tim Martin, minister, Blunham Strict and Particular Baptist
Mr Levy, minister and Deacon, of Dunstable

Baptist
Mr John Gosden, minister, Southbournh
Mr Lawrence, Evangelical from Harold
Mr Ramsbottom, Pastor Luton Bethel, and
Gospel Standard editor GS
Mr Scott Pearson, Pastor, Baptist
Mr Baumber, minister Bedford Providence, Strict
and Baptist (Trustee)
Mr Tim Martin, Blunham Strict Baptist (Trustee)
Mr Sayers, Pastor, Watford Strict and Particular
Baptist
Mr Dawson Strict and Particular Baptist

Kent

Mr Tanton, Tenterdon Strict Baptist
Mr Gould, minister, Limes Avenue Baptist
Mr Dix, pastor Dunstable Baptist and Trinitarian
Bible Society representative
Mr Terence Brown, minister and Secretary of
the Trinitarian Bible Society
Mr Redhead, minister of Pottern End?

Mr Gerald Buss, minister Strict and Particular
Baptist

Mr Buss (senior) Strict and Particular Baptist
Mr Howe Pastor of Ivanhoe Particular Baptist
Mr Paul Rowland (Presbyterian leanings)

Mr. G. Ashdown of the Protestant Alliance

A Range of doctrinal differences

It became apparent to me, through listening to the various visiting ministers and my conversations with them, that we had a range of ministers with differing degrees of understanding of scripture. Some had and held opposing views to each other. We had those who held to the 1689 confession of faith some the 1966 Strict Baptist confession, some who were convinced of the Presbyterian position. Some holding to “duty faith and repentance” and one who could not accept the Bierton Articles of Religion of 1831.

I Am Appointed Secretary

And Correspondent
There came a time when we needed a correspondent and Secretary and I agree to take on this role and had the responsibility of engaging minister for the coming year. It was all-new to me and found it very difficult

and a real sense of responsibility.

I had to deal with a request expressing in a letter from Colnebrook Strict and Particular Baptist Church who had informed the church (via me the secretary) that one of their members, Mr Martin Hunt was under censorship. Martin Hunt was one of our visiting ministers, who I found to be a very nice and polite man and had a good understanding of scripture. However Mr King and I were asked by the church to speak to Martin about this issue being raised and it was difficult to understand the problem. It was to do with particular redemption so in the end I asked Martin if he could subscribe to our Bierton Articles of Religion of 1831. His reply was no he could not. This resolved the matter and the Church decided not to invite Martin to preach again. This helped us not to judge this issue he had with his church but rather enabled us to respond to the concerns of the Colnebrook Church in the correct way.

Church Minutes A Cause Of Concern

It was my responsibility as secretary to keep church minute and the church book and during this time I was able read the issues that had been spoken about and the decisions that were made before I became a member. I was shocked to find the Mr and Mrs Evered had put forward motions to prevent certain visiting ministers from preaching due to un-substantiated beliefs about their conduct. I knew that this would be contrary to the gospel and so I raised the matter with the church and stated the need to put the matter right. Unfortunately to one member who was implicated in this form of slander was so upset it was felt best to leave the matter as it was. I realized from that moment I had crossed Mrs Evered.

I continued being the secretary and correspondent until I married and moved briefly away to Leicester.

21 Caterham Strict Baptist Holiday

I meet my wife
It was during this time in 1976 I felt loneliness and fell into depression and friend’s of Alan Benning, Paul and Susan Aston invited me to go with them on holiday with a Christian group, to Switzerland. Paul was a student at a Watford Evangelical Bible College and so I went. It was on that holiday that I was made more aware of a holiday being arranged by Caterham Strict Baptist being, held at the Elim Pentecostal Bible College,at Capel. It was here that I met my wife to be

that year who is Irene Protheroe, from Shepsherd in Leicestershire where Paul Cook was the Pastor of the Evangelical Church.

I Meet Other Evangelicals

In Coventry doctrinal differences
My wife Irene had lived in Coventry and introduced me to her Christian friends including the Minister and Pastor of Holbrook’s Evangelical Church. Here I meet good friends who had a desire to follow the Lord however in discussion they realized my views on predestination, particular redemption, the relationship of the Christian to the Law of Moses and the none offer of the gospel proved a divide between us. However we were able to discuss matters and agree to differ. These conversations enlightened me further to the differences between the Evangelicals and Strict and Particular Baptists and exclusive position of the views expressed in the Gospel Standard Articles of Religion. I was being cast into the mold of the Gospel Standard Baptists. I also learned that the minister of the London Evangelical Church called Westminster Chapel, where Dr Martin Lloyd Jones was a minister was now R.T. Kendal who taught a 4 point Calvinist position namely not particular Redemption. This raised the alarm bell in my mind.

Preparation For Marriage

We were engaged to be married in December 1977 and I had obtained a place on the Technical Teacher Training Course as Wolverhampton Teacher Training College. I resigned from my job at Granada TV Rentals and I moved into student lodgings at the college.

Mean while we purchased a house in Wigston at 64B Moat Street, which turned out as a good buy.



64B Moat Street Wigston

This is the first house we purchased and Irene lived here whilst I was living in student lodgings at Wolverhampton and me move in together the on our wedding day, 9th December 1976.

Regarding Marriage Counselling

During the time and lead up to my Marriage I was really concerned about the idea of birth control, as in conscience I was uncertain as its morality. In this connection I asked our only male married church member about the subject. I was very embarrassed but had to settle the matter for conscience sake. To my dismay the only response and reply to the question was, “moderation in all things”. This was my answer to a very serious question. As I look back it is laughable and now realize how unhelpful ignorance was.

Marriage

I married my wife Irene Protheroe on the 9th December 1977 and the wedding took Place at Bethel Evangelical Church at Wigston.

Our move to Luton

My first teaching post was at Luton College of Higher Education and I commenced lecturing in Electronics in September 1978. And we were able to rent a council house at Lewsy Farm in Dunstable. The funny thing was that we were obtained permission form the council to keep our two goats in the coal shed in the rear garden. building in Wigston were we were married on December 19 th 1977.



Bethel Evangelical Church

Our move to Linslaid

My concern was that I wanted to be in a church with a Pastor particularly now that I had a wife who had been just introduced to the Strict Baptists, so I decided we should attend the Linslaid Strict and Particular Baptist church where Mr Collier was the pastor.

Our Home In Linslaid

Our home in Linslaid
“Fairholme”, Queen Street

We continued here for as short, while when we realized it would be more economical to purchase a house in Linslaid and I travel to Luton to work. In that case we would be near the local church. And so we were able to buy our house called “Fairhome” for £14,000 with a mortgage in Linslaid.

And the Presbyterian Churches

It was my desire to visit Scotland and some of the Presbyterian Churches we rented an old school house in Waternish on the Isle of Skye and we had to cross to the island on a ferry to Porter to get there. It turned out that the Old School house had belonged to Donovan who was a pop star during the 60’s. It was a very quite place but very peaceful building at Staffing where I answered the question.. We were not aware at the time that the Presbyterian churches celebrate their communion twice a year and that particular “Sabbath” as they called it was the occasion of their “Mount of Ordinances”. It was their communion to be held in the morning of that day. We attended the meeting in the morning and we were made very welcome and were asked where we were from.

Free Presbyterian Church

Free Presbyterian Church

Speak To The Question

During the meeting each male in attendance and whom the elders knew were asked to speak or answer a biblical question. And as their custom was, which I was totally unaware, I was addressed as Mr Clarke from the Strict Baptists would you please speak or answer the question. This meant that I had to speak about a verse of scripture presented by the elder to the congregation. The verse of scripture was, Philippians 1 [1 v.] “For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake;” To which I gave my answer and exposition of the verse.

I believe my exposition was accepted for after the meeting we were invited to renew our covenant vows and partake of the communion.

Not knowing what this meant I declined, as I knew nothing of renewing covenant vows from the scripture.

Called Before The Elders

After the communion meeting I was called by one of the men and told to put my jacket on and come before the Elders as they wish to ask my why I had not partaken of their communion. When I explained my reservation and ignorance of their practices they were pleased to be of further help. We were then invited to lunch at one of the Elders home.

Silence Woman These Are Guests

We had a delightful time and at the head of the table was a senior man in his 80’s along with other visitors. One of the other guests enquired of us about the differences between Strict Baptists and Presbyterians. It came a shock to the lady, who had asked the question, that we do not baptize infants. She exclaimed, “What? You do not baptize infants?” At which point the senior man stepped in by saying, “Silence Woman these are guests”. Which I found rather amusing but was not put out by the question and would have freely spoken about it.

Portree Rev Frazer MacDonald

That evening we went to the church in Porter where Rev. Frazer MacDonald was the minister.

Free Presbyterian Church

Portree



Portree Free Presbyterian Church

This minister was a very good preacher and lifted up the Lord Jesus Christ and as their custom was they invited all men to come to Christ and he was very urgent in his exhortation.

I Was Questioned The “Free Offer”

We were later invited to another home, that evening, along with other guests and at one time I was challenged as to why I did not hold to the free offer of the gospel, as we had heard that night. It wasn’t the time or place to go into detail but I realized then that there were real differences between the Free Presbyterian Churches of Scotland and the Strict Baptist (Gospel Standard) Churches in Great Britain and differences that were not to be ignored.

A Return To The Bierton Church

On our return from Sky we decided we could return to Bierton and give more support to the cause. This of course meant a move and the realization of finances, as property in Bierton was very expensive. This meant selling my property in Aylesbury to raise the money.

Angels Come To Help

(or so I thought)

I had bought a terraced house at Canal Side Aylesbury before I got married and I had renovated it. I had borrowed £3000 from Barclays’ bank and was paying this back over a period of 3 years.



3 Canal Side Terrace, Aylesbury. My first House

In September 1977 I left Aylesbury and went to Wolverhampton Polytechnic (Formerly Wolverhampton Technical Teacher Training College) to train as a teacher. I rented out three rooms with shared amenities and had kept a room reserved for myself downstairs.

My mother looked after all the bills and collected rent. Whilst I was at Wolverhampton the boy friend of the lady who lived as a tenant asked if he too could rent a room. This seemed OK so I let a room to him. They soon got married and I saw no real problem. They then asked if they could have just the one double room. I explained that I needed to rent all the rooms but they could have the double room for an appropriate rent. I also said they could use my room down stairs when I wasn’t there.

I thought things were OK but I had a problem three years later (October 1980) when I wanted to sell the house. I knew nothing about the law and the **Land Lord and Tenant Act**. I soon found a buyer for the house and made an offer to buy a house from Mr Groom at Great lane Bierton who was the son of Mr Groom Senior from Brighton.

The couple that rented rooms from me decided to claim they had right of occupation, which prevented me from selling the house. I went through all kinds of indignant feelings and was angry with them. They knew I had rented the rooms to them on condition if I wanted to return they would have to leave. They called in the **Rent Officer** and the officials coming in reducing the rent I was charging them. In the end I decided I would have to take them to court to get them to leave.

I had to say to Mr. Groom I could not proceed with the purchase and he was very upset as it messed all

their plans up and cost him extra money because of the housing chain, which had been broken. He even asked me to meet the extra costs he had incurred. He felt I was morally obliged to pay towards the costs (£1000) due to us not being able to proceed with the purchase. I felt upset by this too.

I felt God was on the side of the righteous a believed it necessary to take my tenants to court to get them to leave. I felt if I were to present my case to the court I would get an order to get these people to leave.

I knew nothing about the law and did could not afford a Solicitor so I did it my self. I believed I could do all things through God who strengthened me.

The Judge asked me what the case was all about. I proceeded to read my script but he soon stopped me. He said you cannot do that and without explaining why asked the defendant's solicitor to state the case.

Apparently you have to present things in a certain order and way and it must conform to a certain protocol. I knew nothing about protocol or the law all I knew was I had been wronged and I was looking for Justice.

The judge said I ought to seek legal help. My case was dismissed much to my dismay and my mother stopped up and protested in the courtroom. I got up and left saying no more. Needless to say I was dismayed and dumbfounded. Where was God where was justice. I realized then the law of our land has nothing to do with morality or right and wrong but was pedantic was according to strict rules. This was not justice. I looked to God for help. I had believed God would appear for my help.

What was All That About?

When I returned the next day to Canal Side to sort things out in the house the man, he was a big Irish man, said what was all that about last night? I did not know what he was talking about. I said what do you mean? He said, “ Two men had been around with lumps of wood last night and said they wanted them out”. I was amazed, as I knew nothing about it. I said I didn’t know anything about it and he should go to the police.

I thought that these must be angels sent from God to warn them not to trifle with me. I felt comforted that this was the case. I began to believe it that things were going to be OK.

In the end I had to employ a Barrister to represent me and many months later the couple agreed to buy

Chapter 22

BIERTON GOSPEL STANDARD CAUSE 1981

83

the house from me at a market rate. It cost me at least £800 in legal fees.

It was a number of years later that my brother confessed to me that he together with another friend of mine Pet Sinfield had been those Angels.

Prevented From Buying A House

As I have already mentioned we had to pull out of buying his bungalow but he was upset by the fact we did not proceed with the purchase. This was his letter to me, which caused me concern.

17th November 1980

Dear David,

As you can see after you had withdrawn from the sale of Great Lane we were put in a very difficult position, because as you remember we had been given until the end of December to complete the purchase of this property. This proved to be quite impossible, and although the builders have been very helpful, they had to increase the price to us by £1500.

We had not bargained for this when we got our mortgage, and together with extra Solicitors fees that were involved, found us at the end of the sale needing to borrow the extra money. This of course must be paid back in the near future and we felt that, as this was not our fault really, that you might feel you could help us with a £1000 of it. We did give you the preference over the cash buyer we had because we wanted to help friends at Bierton Chapel.

If we could have managed in any other way without writing to you, believe me we would have done so.

Trusting that Irene and the children are well. May God bless you all?

Yours Sincerely,

John G

My Reply was as follows:

Dear Mr. G Re: Your letter dated 17th November 1980

I am pleased for you that at last you have moved to your new home but am sorry that the move proved more expensive than you anticipated.

Your request came as a surprise and has caused my conscience much exercise over the morality of the issue; since it would appear you feel Irene and I are obligated to repay some of your losses. However after careful reasoning we do not share the same view and do not accept the obligation. Not only so Irene and I

are unable to do so as we are in financial difficulties ourselves.

I would like to add that had we felt obliged then by the grace of God we would have offered payment for your loss. This did occur in my last transaction when trying to sell Canal Side. I presumed to give the intended purchaser vacant possession within a month of the exchange of contract but I was unable to do so since my tenants refused to leave. In this case I felt obliged to him and offered to pay the expenses of my intended purchaser because he had proceeded to purchase on that basis.

When we spoke to you we did not keep you in the dark over our circumstances and did keep you informed, and our arrangements were subject to contract, which at that time had not been drawn up nor signed at the time of our withdrawal.

I do apologize over the matter for it seems God in His providence intervened having His own reasons and although at the present time we cannot see why.

He may be pleased to show us one day.

Yours with Christian regards,

David Clarke.

Dealings like this always leave a bad taste in the mouth but I had to leave it in God's hands. This shows that Christians are not immune from the normal trials of life and that this chain in buying and selling has a knock on effect. Mr. Groom felt I had let him down so I should compensate him. I too had been let down by the tenants.

Such is life and goes to show we are not immune from the normal difficulties men face in this world in business.

22 Bierton Gospel Standard Cause 1981

During these times there were several moves, initiated by Mrs Evered for the church to join the Gospel Standard list of Churches, as she had been our secretary and was finding it difficult to obtain supply preachers. Her sister Mrs Groom and her brother in Law were members of Prestwood Strict and Particular Baptists and really wanted Bierton to become a listed church. I knew some members were quite happy with the ministers that were engaged to speak and did not see the need to become a Gospel Standard listed Church.

It was during the time we were trying to move back to Bierton, that on the 16th January 1981, our church

decided to join the Gospel Standard list of Churches. Mr Hope, Pastor of Reading, Strict Baptist Church was the Chairman of the meeting and he agreed to do all the necessary documentation regarding this matter and we were duly listed as a Gospel Standard cause. Mr King had made the proposal and seconded by Mrs Evered and a unanimous decision by ballot was taken. It was agreed we became a Gospel Standard listed cause.

This was not how ever without opposition from without the Church. Mr Dix, the Pastor of Dunstable Baptist Church, stated to me personally that we were out of order and it was illegal for us to adopt the Gospel Standard Articles of religion and its Rules of Conduct. This I write about in “The Bierton Crisis 1984.

Ruth Ellis a Church Member Dies

At this time Ruth Ellis who had been a great encouragement to my wife and I before I married and I use to visit her regularly with a friend and have good fellowship in the lord. She eventually need looking after and ended her days at the Bethesda Home in Harpendon. I believe it was noted that one could always have choice conversations with her on spiritual matters.

Mr Collier, Pastor of Linslaid

In early April 1982 Mr Collier from Linslaid came to our Church midweek to our prayer meeting and he spoke on the subject of the Falkland war, this was because England was at war with Argentina in 1982. He informed the Church of the ancient conflict between the Roman Catholic system and the Reformation in Europe. Argantina being a Catholic country. Mr Collier was a friend of Dr Ian Paisley and through his connection we were able to here Ian Paisley preach in Mr Greens Church in London. It was always good to here him preach, as he was an excellent preacher even though he differed over certain points of doctrine.

In connection with Mr Collier it was remarked by his family that, “If he had been disturbed by events in the first twenty-five years of his pastorate he was even more profoundly disturbed by developments since. Blatantly heretical statements from so-called Church leaders, the fresh impetus given to the ecumenical drift by the charismatic movement, the historic visit of the Pope to this country in 1982 - all these things affected him deeply. His response, however, was not

to project himself back into the past in a nostalgia for better days. It was to work for the present and for the future. It was to recognize that God is still working today in raising up a witness to the gospel. He found encouragement in his contact with other ministers both within his own denomination and outside; and it is a simple matter of fact that the extent of such contact increased in his latter days.”

I Meet Dr Ian Paisley At Oxford

At this time there was a memorial rally held in Oxford to remember our Martyrs Cranmer, Latimer and Ridley. And I remember Ian Paisley echoing the words, Fear not we shall light a fire in England that will never be put out”.

Shortly after the accession of Mary in 1553 a summons was sent to Latimer to appear before the council at Westminster. Though he might have escaped by flight, and though he knew, as he quaintly remarked, “Smithfield already groaned for him,” he at once joyfully obeyed. The pursuant, he said, was “a welcome messenger.” The hardships of his imprisonment, and the long disputations at Oxford, tolled severely on his health, but he endured all with unbroken cheerfulness.

On the 16th of October 1555 Hugh Latimer and Ridley were led to the stake at Oxford. Never was man more free than Latimer from the taint of fanaticism or less dominated by “vainglory,” but the motives, which now inspired his courage, not only placed him beyond the influence of fear, but also enabled him to taste in dying an ineffable thrill of victorious achievement. Ridley he greeted with the words, “Be of good comfort, master Ridley, and play the man; we shall this day light such a candle by God’s grace in England as (I trust) shall never be put out.”

He “received the flame as it were embracing it. After he had stroked his face with his hands, and (as it were) bathed them a little in the fire, he soon died (as it appeared) with very little pain or none.”

Archbishop Cranmer, on the day of his execution, he dramatically withdrew his recantations, to die a heretic to Roman Catholics and a martyr to others. His legacy lives on within the Church of England through the Book of Common Prayer and the Thirty-Nine Articles, an Anglican statement of faith derived from his work. He renounced the recantations that he had written or signed with his own hand since his degradation and as such he stated his hand would be

punished by being burnt first.

He then said, “And as for the Pope, I refuse him, as Christ’s enemy, and Antichrist with all his false doctrine”. He was pulled from the pulpit and taken to where Latimer and Ridley had been burnt six months before. As the flames drew around him, he fulfilled his promise by placing his right hand into the heart of the fire and his dying words were, “Lord Jesus, receive my spirit... I see the heavens open and Jesus standing at the right hand of God.”[97]

Rescuing Michael’s Roles Royce

(About 1982)

Whilst these things were going on my brother got into serious difficulties. His business was failing and he became very depressed so much so he did not know how to sort some of his problems. He came to me one day explaining he had sold his Roles Royce to a person in Milton Keynes for £7000 and he was still owed £3,500. He was too ill to sort it out. The person kept giving one excuse after another as to why he could not pay the money.

I felt indignant and was not prepared to sit down and see some one-take advantage of my Michael because he was ill and could not sort his problems out.

I said to Michael come on I will go with him and get it sorted. I dressed in my Crombie over coat and suit and looked very official and we went to this person’s house in Milton Keynes. I told Michael not to worry I would deal with any problems. When the person answered the door, early on morning, I said who I was and what we had come for and that I was a Christian and we intended to sort out the issue with the Roles Royce. The bloke looked at me gone out.

Michael decided he wanted the car back and so it was agreed that he would pay back the £3500 in cash and take the car. I found out that the previous deal had been done between another person as well as this man and the car was in his garage somewhere else. Also a problem with a finance company had arisen. This all seemed straight forward and we left with the intention (or so I thought) to return with the £3500 cash and collect the car that day.

My brother then explained that he understood that these men had raised money through a finance company to buy the car and he only got half the money. I then feared if he gave up the £3500 cash to them he would loose that as well, as the finance

company would claim ownership of the car. He had already gone to the police but the police said it was not a problem they could deal with so my brother felt real down about the whole issue. He said he could not remember signing any forms with a finance company but I began to feel the case was not a straight forward, as it first seemed. Michael kept saying he could not remember what had happened.

I got the impression Michael had been party to some deal and was keeping some thing from me and these men had just tucked him up for £3500 and they now had no money to pay. Michael informed me years later that he did not know about this and that these men took him advantage of him, whilst he was ill.

Michael decided to get the car back so he paid a couple of his heavy friend’s £250 to go and collect the car. Sure enough the next day the Roles Royce was in bed in my garage at Bierton, out of the way. I felt much better even though my brother didn’t. This did not stop my brother worrying because apparently there was more to it than first met the eye there was some problem with the finance company.

I felt let down by Michael for not telling me all this. Had he told me all this in the beginning instead of being devious. (Michael now tells me I was wrong) I could have helped him. In the end the finance company contacted Michael and he by then realized the car belonged to the finance company. Michael, through not being able to cope with the worry, agreed to return the car as he realized the deal they had done was not straightforward.

This was all out of my hands and on reflection I think it would have been better to keep the car and give the finance company the £3500, but at the time I was not able to sort the issue out for Michael because he had kept things from me.

I felt upset for my brother because he had lost his car and all that money. We are always wise after an event.

23 A Call to Preach the Gospel

I believe that God puts the desire to preach and speak His Word into the hearts of them whom he calls. This desire was placed in my heart the day Jesus called me to hear him and believe in him. My desire to help others turn from the way that leads to hell and to Christ himself for salvation, was acknowledge by Jesus the night I got saved. His reply to me, when I asked what about the others, was all I could do

was tell them. What better way than to preach the unsearchable riches of Christ to men.

I had spoken on a number of times at Bierton Church during the weeknight prayer meeting from the table not the pulpit. Gradually however I felt more and more uncomfortable when sitting in the pew just listening to sermons. Particularly when things were not very well expressed and some times serious errors were being spoken. It grieved me to listen to the ignorant talk off the religious whose eyes were blinded to the truth of God and who sought to bind burdens on peoples backs. This issue over the hat and lady visitor and a head covering which write about latter was an example. Not that I am against a head covering for a woman but what had happened to this lady visitor was wrong.

I Did Not Believe In Bible Colleges

When I first became a Christian I did not believe in Bible Colleges. Thinking I do not want men to teach me, I wanted God to teach me. From what little I had seen of vicars and so called trained men I felt Bible Colleges were of no use because these people are not even born again.

Wolverhampton Polytechnic

Teacher Training

So I dismissed the idea of Bible college for me, never the less I wanted to learn all about God and speak his word in clarity and truth. This desire turned me to read about the lives of men of God. I went from reading the Beano and Dandy comics and James Bond books to the Bible and then on to the writings of John Bunyan, Dr. John Gill, John Owen and Calvin in a matter of two or three years. It was when I met my wife to be that she encourage train me to be a teacher and that is why I attended the Technical Training College in Wolverhampton, to learn how to teach technical subjects.

An Ulterior Motive

My ulterior motive was to learn how to teach so that I could then teach the gospel. I took one year out from work and studied at Wolverhampton Polytechnic and finally graduated with a teaching Certificate in Education. This was awarded by Birmingham University in 1978.

I believed that I could learn from secular professional teachers how to teach and then would then be able to take the substance of what God was

showing me and then present it to men in a way they could understand. This was my desire.

I took my first teaching post at Luton College of Higher Education commencing teaching in 1978

I inform the Church at Bierton of my felt call to preach

It was during this time at Luton College and at Bierton Church that I felt it right to make known my desire to the church as I believe I was being called by God to preach the word of Jesus Christ.

The church asked Mr. Hill of Luton and minister of the Gospel and Mr. Hope of Reading, both Gospel Standard ministers invited me to share with them my calling..

Wolverhampton Teacher Training Group



David (B centre Right) at Wolverhampton Polytechnic Questioned about the Law of Moses

Mr Hill questioned my belief regarding the Law of Moses and both he and Mr Hope listened. I expressed my understanding of the believers relationship to the Law of Moses and concluded that that Law of Moses did not make the Lord Jesus righteous as he was always righteous.. He had an essential righteousness independent of the Law. He did not have to fulfil the Law to become righteous. He always was righteous. Had he been judged according to the law he would have been declared righteous and so he was.

That imputed righteousness is the righteousness of God, given to all who believe, that Christ’s Righteousness imputed justifies us, without our works according to the Law.

Mr Hill’s Conclusion

Mr Hill concluded that my leading was right and Mr Hope agreed. It was then put to the church that I should preach and exercise any gift I had. This

was duly done and people came from Albert Street Strict Baptists Church, Oxford and Eaton Bray Strict Baptist Churches, to hear me preach the word of God that weeknight meeting at Bierton.

Sent by the Church to Preach

It was agreed without question that I should preach, as the Lord opened up the way, and from that day in 1982, letters came from different churches asking me to preach at various Strict Baptist Chapels throughout the country. This was my call by the Lord and being sent by the church to preach the gospel, as the Lord open up the door for me to speak. This came with the blessing of the church believing that the gifts and callings of God are without repentance.

I Preach At Various Churches

In fact I was so overwhelmed with being asked to preach at so many places, I could have been preaching three times on a Sunday every week of the year and during the week on week night services. This was on top of my full time work, which involved teaching two nights a week at Luton College as well as continuing my studies with the Open University.

In a very short period of time I was engaged to preach at the following Strict Baptist Chapels throughout the country:

Place	Church
Oakington	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Eaton Bray	Strict and Particular Gospel Standard
Oxford	Hope Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Uffington	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Grove	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Evington	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Stamford	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Leicester	Zion Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Luton	Ebebezer Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard

Reading	Zoar Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Fenstanton	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Attleborough	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Beeches Road	Independent Baptists
Bradford	Strict and Particular Baptists
Nottingham	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Matfield	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard
Blackheath	Strict and Particular Baptists Gospel Standard

Hats Or Head Coverings For Ladies

Trouble was on its way in the form of religious oppression. On Sunday morning, in 1983 I took to church Dick Holmes’ daughter. Dick was well known in Aylesbury and he had 4 daughters and two sons. I worked for him as a trainee aerial rigger. She had been through a divorce and was having a very difficult time. I suggested she came with me to church, as she needed help from God.

She was dressed in tight black slacks and a short top, which showed all her figure. She had long peroxide blond hair and her face was made up. This mode of dress was a striking contrast to the elderly ladies who dressed very modestly with very little make up on and all ware hats to cover their heads in church.

Unfortunately this was too much for Mrs. Evered who came up to me after the service (I call it a meeting because the meetings of the New Testament churches were not called services) and she said to me the next time I bring a female to chapel I should tell her to wear a hat.

Mrs. Evered said that all Gospel Standard Churches insisted women cover their heads and so should we.

I responded that by saying, “ what ever others do that was their concern they were wrong if they enforced the covering of the head upon a none church member and women visitor having no profession of the Christian faith.”

I said she must raise this issue at our church meeting.

This spirit of legalism naturally took me back. Here was a young woman in sever distress needing

the mercy and love of God as revealed in Jesus Christ and all Mrs. Evered seemed to be concerned with was the wearing of a Hat.

I knew the principle of a believing women dressing modestly and being in subjection to her own husband and covering her head in worship. I also knew the principle of the woman not exercising authority over the man or teaching a man but this action of Mrs Evered to use the phrase, “took the biscuit”.

I was a man and was being instructed by a woman, Mrs Evered, to order or insist a visiting unbelieving female wear a hat In order to uphold the principle that it was a shame for a woman to worship God without a head covering.

This covering according to the scripture was to show the angels she was in subjection to the man and not usurping authority over him.

Mrs. Evered missed the whole point of the gospel and in her religious zeal to maintaining an outward form of religion transgressed the rule she sought to maintain.

This religious spirit was not of God and I believed the gospel needed to be preached to set men free from such darkness. But who would do this?

A Spanking From the Pulpit

I was very conscious of the instruction that I was responsible to God for the discipline of my children and knew the scriptures, which speak of spoiling children through lack of discipline. And the exhortation that if I spare the rod of correction I would spoil the child (Prov. 13. 24). The other scripture, which spoke to me, was that of how a good father ought to “ Rule his house well, his children being obedient and subject to him “. That if I did not know how to rule my own house how should I be able to take care of the church of God (1 Tim 3. 5 - 12. I believed the scripture spoke clearly about corporal punishment and it was a must. (Prov 29. 15 and Prov 23. 13).

The first occasion I felt the need to exercise corporal punishment was on Isaac when he was very small. As I write this now I smile and I am sure he would do too. I think he needs corporal punishment now at the age of 20 years old.

Isaac had done some thing, which warranted correction, and I felt this occasion I would use the rod of correction. I was a small thin garden cane, a green one. I made him stand away from me and I said it hurt me more than it would hurt him, to have to correct

him like this. He was about 4 years old. I smacked his bottom with the cane and he jumped and couldn’t say a word for a few moments. Then he burst into tears saying, “ daddy that stings”. From that day forward that cane was called the “stinging stick”. That was not the last time the stinging stick was used.

On another occasion I was preaching in Bierton Chapel and Isaac and Esther were sitting with there mum on the back row of the chapel. During the sermon Isaac was playing his mum up and he would not sit still and kept messing about. His behaviour was unacceptable. I was gradually becoming cross with him until I felt I must do some thing about it.

I stopped speaking and said to the congregation “ excuse me” and climbed down the pulpit steps and went to the back of the chapel. I picked Isaac up and took him out side the chapel and informed him I was displeased with his behaviour and gave his three smacks on the bottom. With this he burst into tears and when he stopped I took him back in the chapel and placed him besides his mum. I then went back into the pulpit and apologized for the interruption and proceeded with the sermon as though nothing had happened.

I heard afterwards the spanking was heard through out the chapel and a couple of the ladies were horrified at what I had done but they said nothing to me. I felt I had done the right thing using the rod of correction to drive foolishness from the child (prove. 22. 15).

Is Corporal Punishment Correct ?

Hatred stirs up strife’s but love covereth all sins. (Prov. 10. 12)

Prov 10 13. A rod is for the back of him that is void of understanding.

Prov 13 24. He that spareth the rod hateth his son: he that loveth him chasteneth him betimes.

Prov 19 18. Chasten thy son whilst there is hope spare not for his crying.

Prov 19 29. Judgments are prepared for scorns and stripes for the back of fools.

Prov 19 30. The blueness of a wound cleanseth away evil: so do stripes the inward parts of the belly.

Prov 22. 15 Foolishness is bound up in the heart of the child but the rod of correction will drive it far from him.

Prov 23. With hold not correction from the child: for If 13 - 14 thou beatest him with the rod he shall

not die.

Prov 29 15. The rod and reproof give wisdom: but a child left to himself bringeth his mother to shame.

Answer: Yes.

24 The Papal Visit 1982

This year Pope John Paul 11 was due to visit Britain. This was to be the first time in 400 years.

Very few people saw the significance of this and I felt the need to inform people about such an event.

I wrote to the Bierton Church, which meet on the 16th January 1982 (This was 14 years to the day of my conversion) asking if we could invite a member of **The British Council of Protestant Christian Churches**, using the Bierton Chapel to meet and to teach clear biblical principles as to how we could act responsibly and maintain a Godly witness in the present time. I suggested it would be helpful to many churches in the area.

Mrs. Evered expressed the Bierton Chapel was not the place to hold such a meeting but some other place like the village hall. Mr. King said they had Roman Catholic friends and would not wish to offend them!

From this time I began to wonder about the church at Bierton and believed I would see the hand of God out against her.

I remembered, “They that honour me I will honour”.

Our Home In Bierton



187 Aylesbury Road Bierton

I held the meeting in my house and invited several people from different churches and Rev. Gordon Ferguson came and preached for us. We eventually was able to buy our home in Bierton it was a detached bungalow just down the road from the Bierton Chapel. I felt really blessed by God to own it and being so near

to our chapel. I had been shocked by the reluctance of the Bierton church to use the chapel to conduct a meeting informing people of the error of the Papal system of Rome, and how we might act righteously in the present day since the Pope was to visit Britain that year.

I had seen the Pope on the TV screen, when at Wembley Stadium, and the whole crowd, thousands of them, were singing praise to the Pope. They were singing, “He’s got the whole world in his hands’. And the Pope received that praise. I saw it and heard it with my own eyes and ears. This man is an Anti Christ. I felt I must speak out other wise the stones would do.

I write to D.B. an Anglican Vicar

Since the recent visit of the Pope to Britain, on May 28th 1982, I was compelled to examine the claims of the papacy and the Roman Catholic Church.

After that time I was very much alert to the activity of the Church of Rome and the trend for the Anglican Church to move closer to Rome. About one year after this time I read an article in a magazine called “Contact”, by Rev D.B. an Anglican Vicar at Walton Street Church of England. I was move to write to him.

Here is the letter:
187 Aylesbury Road Bierton Buckinghamshire

Dear Mr. Brewin, 17th August 1982

Having read your article, which appeared in Mays issue of “Contact” (1982), titled Roman Catholicism, I am constrained to write to you as a preliminary step. For you express views concerning Roman Catholicism and Pope John Paul II which are not shared by many Christians. You indicate your views concerning the Pope by stating the John Paul the II are a man of deep spirituality and courage and so worthy of our respect. You say he is a Christian, and a Christian Leader, although you differ on the authority he and his church lays claim too. Never the less there are common grounds between Anglicans and Roman Catholic as fellow Christians and belonging to a Christian Church.

You list four basic areas of common ground for this recognition:

A You are (Anglican and Roman Catholic) are both people of Christ.

B Are both people of the bible

C Have Sacraments of Baptism and Holy Communion

D Are both people of the Holy Spirit.

You then express the real differences, which you believe ought to be remembered.

Now as a minister of the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ I write to you believing your article and beliefs do endanger the flock of Christ, over which you are and over seer and I would be failing in my responsibility should I remain silent and not approach you.

May I then go through some of the points you mention?

A You are both people of Christ

The justification for saying this is that both churches call upon the name of Christ and worship Him as saviour and Lord. My question to you is where is the evidence of this? To own him as saviour and Lord is to call upon no other name than his. This being demonstrated by rejecting all others whether lords of lordesses. Is this true of both churches?

My evidence is the present Pope John Paul II calls upon Mary the Queen of Heaven in prayer. (Quotation from “Return to Poland” Collins)

Before the Black Madonna of Jasn Gora (where he had many times in the past whispered “totus tuus” i.e.. completely yours) there he re consecrated Poland to the immaculate heart of Mary as the Queen of the popish kingdom.

He further told the image “ I consecrate to you the whole Church- every where and to the ends of the earth. I consecrate to you all humanity; all men and women. All the peoples and nations. I consecrate to you Europe and all the continents, I consecrate to you Rome and Poland (who are) now united through your servant. Mother accept us all! Mother do not abandon us! Mother be our Guide!

This shows a plain contradiction to you first statement that the Church of Rome calls upon Christ’s name as Lord. How can is be said of him he is a man of God of deep spirituality worthy of our respect and a Christian. A man stooped in idolatry and spiritual darkness.

B You are both people of the bible

The evidence for this statement is that since the Vatican Council, 20 years ago, the Roman Catholic Church has put great emphasis on bible study for individuals and groups. With a profound effect.

But which bible do they advance to be the word of God is my question. My evidence is that:

a) The tradition of the Roman Catholic Church is of equal authority with the bible and the Apocryphal books must be considered as scripture. (Council of Trent 1545). Hence the bible which the Catholics are lead to read contains the Apocrypha and the reason being they require 11 Maccabees 12 verse 40 - 45 to teach and maintain their heretical doctrines of prayers for the dead. (The Apocrypha must be accepted as scripture under the penalty of a mortal sin).

b) The bible is subject to the churches interpretation of the Douay or Confraternity i.e. those versions, which are tailored to teach Catholic Doctrine, and notes are the version put forward as scripture. Again it is still a mortal sin for a Catholic to read a Protestant version except the R.S.V. (Catholic Edition). Hence the Catholic is not free to read the scripture and interpret it for himself. The Roman Catholic Church under the infallible Pope when reading the bible must rule him. For there can be no other interpretation than what the Church dictates.

C Both have the Sacraments of Baptism and Holy Communion

This however is without qualification. My evidence is that the Roman Catholic Church have the Mass and Sacrificing priest, both of which are heretical and opposed to the Holy Communion or Lords Supper.

As for baptism the Roman Catholic Church maintains the doctrine of baptismal regeneration by which means all past sins are forgiven. Hence baptism is essential to salvation. (See Trent catechism) quote Infants, unless regenerated unto God by the grace of baptism, whether their parents be Christian of infidels are born to eternal misery and perdition). Hence we see the Church of Rome has no Christian Ordinances but the reverse.

D Your are both people of the Holy Spirit

Your evidence for this is that the renewal movement has made a good impression upon the Roman Catholic Church with the effect of bringing many Christians together even within the Church of England. Here you place undoubted reliance upon renewal and gathering together imputing this work to the Holy Spirit. Hence concluding the Spirit of God makes no distinction so who are we to put up doctrinal barriers hindering our gathering together with which we please?

Here I would ask the following: If both communions

have the same Spirit of truth, light and love for Jesus Christ why are they not lead in the same way. If the Holy Spirit say, “ Come out of her my people that ye be not partakers of her sins (Rev. 18 verse 4) what spirit is it that keeps them in the Church of Rome or moves the Anglican Community to seek such unity with her. Rome is an Apostate Church.

If the spirit which is in the Roman Catholic Church which leads them to blaspheme the Son of God in the sacrifice of the mass and bow do,wn to idols and seeks the aid of departed saints then what spirit moved Luther and the reformers to obey the truth and leave Rome, and the Papal Pontiff, and establish true Christian Churches?

What biblical evidence do we have that the Roman Catholic Church is possessed and moved by the Spirit of God.

You also express your personal belief in respect of the Pope being no Anti- Christ. However the Church of England and her founders held opposite views. Remember Cranmer, Latimer and Ridley. We should surely keep as close to the bible as these fathers in the faith and defend the little ones of Christ’s fold against all error and preserve them as a chaste virgin unto Him (2 Cor 11 verse 2)

Now my prayer to God is that Christian men of Aylesbury be united in Christ’s cause and truth having love for the brethren and his dear children in the bonds of true Gospel unity and peace.

May the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be the cause and the communion of the Holy Spirit the means and life of His Church now and forever more?

Yours in Christian concern,
David Clarke.

In membership of Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church.

25 I Go Fishing For Men

In May 1983 I was engaged to preach at the church in Bierton on Sunday 5th June 1983. I have always had that desire to catch men for Jesus Christ but how do you do it. I was now living in Aylesbury and a lot of my former friends were still in and around Aylesbury, having no hope and without God in the world.

I felt compelled to do some thing to get the message of the love of God in Jesus Christ, to them some how. Jesus had done for me and that I was preaching at Bierton Church I decided I should go and ask the

Bucks Herald,a local news paper to give me some free advertising. I simply went to the Bucks Herald office and told them my story. I said I wanted to reach all my old friends to tell them what the Lord on, 5th of June that they were all welcome.

I was prepared to advertise but I know I was being cheeky in asking for it free. Little did I realize it but I was giving them their front-page news for the week. Before I knew it the photographer was out to see me and a reporter taking notes for a story. It all happened so quickly

The story appeared as follows on the front page of the Bucks Herald on Thursday, May 19th 1983.

Providentially this meeting was televised and can be viewed on Youtube

(Click here to view) [David Preaches at Bierton Chapel 5th June1983](#)

I felt the need to be very careful because in October 1982 I had already found some opposition from one part of the church and I was not out to cause trouble. They were against a certain good minister and visiting preacher because he had used the term Evangelical Repentance and that he read the Evangelical Times. I had defended this man in every way I knew how but for the sake of peace in the church decided not to asked this man to preach again. I was very sad and disturbed by this and I believed from that time Satan was provoked by my actions. And there was more to come. So for this reason I felt the need to be extra careful.

A News Paper Report

I was landed with a problem as I did not expect any of this to happen and I hadn’t informed the church and so I felt the need to explain what had happened in case it offended any one. I felt relieved when no one was upset. I was landed with a problem as I did not expect any of this to happen and I hadn’t informed the church and so I felt the need to explain what had happened in case it offended any one. I felt relieved when no one was upset.





Come And Be Helped



The Berton Meeting 5th June 1983

The following week I went fishing, looking in the pubs, and visiting people’s homes looking for my former friends in crime, in order to bring them along to hear what Jesus had done for me and could do for them.

It wasn’t long before the national news network were on to me and wanted the story which I believe

appeared in one of the national news papers. I was disappointed in the write up because I felt it was trivializing the reality of what was going on. This is the official transcript:

Dear David Here’s what we put out on the national Telex service. Looking forward to seeing you at the service June 5th Yours Peter Game

From Peter Game, OX and Bucks NA Catch:

Reformed crook David Clarke is hot on the trail of his mates in crime. He’s turned detective to trace thieves, drug pushers, burglars, bandits and drunks in a massive one man round-up aimed at changing their lives.

And it could result in the most bizarre meeting of shady characters a town has eve known.

David, 33 wants to pack them all into a tiny church at Berton, bucks, and tell them how God saved him from spending a life behind bars.

And if the Local C.I.D. force at nearby Aylesbury, bucks wants to turn up and join in the hymn singing too they are welcome. David a married man with two children from Aylesbury Road, Berton, is a lay preacher in the Baptist church.

He said, “God helped me and can help all my old buddies too”.

David an Electronics lecturer at a Polytechnic explained:

“ I ‘ve already persuaded some old villainous pals to come along. I want to pack the church with criminals, but it’s going to be a tough job”.

The former thief and drug user left Borstal aged 18 and decided to lead a life of luxury based on crime.

“I was in a car ringing business, thieving vehicles and knocking them out again,” he confessed.

“ I’ve broken into an old peoples home to steal a colour telly, taken garage equipment, nicked from tills, walked of with speed boat engines, and taken drugs. I’ve even sold drugs and got involved in permissive sex.

“There were times when I used to keep an axe and a mallet in my car just in case. Now it has all changed.

His life took a drastic change when he “met Jesus Christ” during LSD trip and joined the Baptist Church.

And when detectives questioned him about an offence he did not commit he confessed to 24 he did carry out.

He Added “ I’ve had a clean sheet for 13 years. I’m

not going to preach the bible at the bad boys --- Just show them how God helped me and let them make up their minds”.

Ends.

Memo to news desk: Service on June 5th. We believe this man is absolutely genuine in his actions.

Memo End.

Out Come Of The Meeting

The meeting went ahead as planned but not many people turned up. I heard that some did not come because they did not wish to be associated with each other. Pat Jones and Malcolm Kirkham were now enemies. Pat Jones had not long ago been around Malcolm’s house to blast him with a shotgun. Malcolm had been in evolved in drug pushing and other things.

Mike West said he wasn’t prepared to sit or be associated with drug pushers and criminal’s etc.

I had spoken as faithfully as I could at that meeting of the Lord Jesus Christ and I remember saying from the pulpit how good God had been to me in blessing me with a good Job, a wife, a nice house, children being in church and many friends what more could a natural man want. I had comments made by several people that God had really blessed me providentially and I knew it.

On reflection it seems from this time I was battered from every way. First my church membership was lost, then my health, which affected my call to preach. Then my children were attacked, then my home was lost, and then my Job was lost. Then my faith in God was lost, which led to me giving up on my marriage. I

My troubles appear to begin after this meeting

As I write this it reminds me of the story of Job who was truly blessed by God in his own soul and in material things, then Satan came seeking to destroy his faith in God. God gave Satan leave to do it but the end of Job best better than his beginning. Thanks be to God. I hope my story will reflect the same faithfulness of God to me.

Stephen Royce and family at Eaton Bray

Shortly after this time I met Stephen Royce and his family including his father and mother who were members of Watford Strict Baptist Church. Stephen had become a believer and was seeking to resolve difficulties that he had in receiving the wording of the added articles of the Gospel Standard.

He had been brought up at the Watford Strict

Baptist Church, where Mr Hill was the pastor but he had moved to Luton Ebenezer and Mr Sayers’s senior was the new pastor and his son Howard Sayers was a minister sent from the Watford church. At that time Howard made it clear he did not accept the added articles o f the Gospel Standard that of course was no help to Stephen Royce or his father.

Stephen Added Articles

Stephen Royce was had become a Christian and believed he should be baptized but Mr Ramsbottom, the pastor of Luton, would not put forward his request to be baptized to the church as he in conscience could not subscribe in totality to these added articles.

This became a real problem to him and he wondered why he could not be baptized, as a believer and simply not join the Church meeting at Bethel chapel. As he could not in conscience agree with the wording of the Added Article because they appeared to deny scripture.

I fully understood his problem and felt for him so I put pen to paper (or type face) and sought to answer his questions, since I was a member of a Gospel Standard listed Church and sent minister from that Church.

My reply to Stephen Royce is published in,”The Berton Crisis” and I believe was a scriptural answer and support to the non-offer of the gospel that we had declared to be the case in the Gospel Standard Articles.

The Holy Table

About this time, I took my children to church and I had my brother’s daughter with me and she would have been about 5 years old. After the Sunday school before the morning meeting began I happened to place her cardigan on the table at the front of the chapel. This was the table used when conducting church affairs and for the communion. The pulpit was behind this were the preacher stood and preached. The table was where the hymns were announced and given out.

Mrs. Evered, in her lovely manor, came up to me and said that I was to take the cardigan off, “The Holy Table”. I was shocked by this remark. What was this all about we now had a Holy Table? We were not Roman Catholic or High Anglicans. I was dismayed at such heresy and after the morning meeting I asked the church members to stay behind whilst I established what was going on. I began to realize I was unearthing

more religious errors, which would have to be dealt with sooner than later.

I asked the few members of the church, in front of Mrs. Evered about the “Holy table”. I said there was no such thing as a holy table in the New Testament this was religious error and just like the Roman Catholics and their superstitions. I said I would not stand by and let this error go unchecked. To my surprise and disappointment Miss G Ellis became angry and walked out saying she was feed up with it all. She said she would not want a pair of shoe put on the kitchen table and she walked out in anger. I thought to my self we are in two different worlds what was going on in the minds of the church and congregation at Bierton. I felt so taken up with zeal for the cause of God and truth I could have taken a large axe and cut the table up in front of every one. I decided to do it another way. I would use the “sword of the spirit”.

Television Radio and Cassette Recorder

I was all too well aware of the issues regarding the television set as it was the general consensus of opinion it was wrong to own or view a television. This matter had arisen not only in our church but also anther churches that I had visited.

I had no problem with the television because I did not watch it and after all it could be switch off if one had one. I had been a television engineer working for Granada TV Rentals and had visited the Dicker, taking with me, in the company car, my Scotts Presbyterian friend James. This was with the company advertising on the side of the vehicle, which had caused him embarrassment. I had also taken Mrs Evered, in that very vehicle, all the way to Brighten, to visit her relatives, including Mr Frank Gosden.

Also I had on many occasions taken our church members to the various anniversary meetings in my company car. All of these churches were Gospel Standard churches. So I was aware of the issues involved. I had discussed the matter with Mr Joseph Rutt, a minister from Bethel Church Luton, who had been very expressive of his opinions against the use and ownership, by church members, of a television set and had made his views known to all.

I am informed it is wrong for me to teach electronics Mrs Evered had express it was wrong for me to teach the subject of electronics at Luton College because it helped students repair television sets. It was therefore a matter I could not ignore but deal

with in due season. I had discovered far more serious issues that needed to be treated first. I could well imagine the same kind of problems occurring over the Radio, Newspapers and the cassette recorder and future electronic means of communication.

Escorted out of St. Albans Abbey

In October 1983 I was informed that officials of St. Albans Abbey, a Church of England establishment, were for the first time in 400 years giving official recognition to the practice of the Roman Catholic Mass. This was probably as a direct result of the Papal visit to Britain in 1982.

They had invited a Roman Catholic Father Plourde to serve in the Anglican Church and he was to offer Mass on a regular basis at the St. Albans Abbey. This was in fact illegal and against the principles of the Act of Settlement.

No one seemed to care or could see what was happening I had studied the teaching of the Roman Catholic Church and found it in very serious error.

I felt constrained to support any kind of protest just to let people know what was going on throughout the world. The Mass had no place in the Christian faith.

I decided to take my two children Isaac John (5) and Esther Jane (4) with me to protest against this evil

I attended the meeting on a Saturday afternoon and before very long a Mr. Scott Person of the British Council of Protestant Churches stood up and made a formal protest. He was escorted out.

I waited a while and just before the meeting resumed I stood up and made my protest. I too was escorted out of the meeting with Isaac and Esther in my hands.

This event hit the headline news again in Aylesbury and also in the local news in Luton these articles appear as follows:

The Bucks Herald

19th October 1983



They must also have regretted that, when the two great Christian leaders, the Pope and the Archbishop of Canterbury, are striving to promote peace and understanding between religious denominations, well- meaning but fanatics should seek to destroy their endeavours.

Half the cold-blooded murders in Ireland wear the cloke of religion as else where in the world, whilst the Russians persecute Baptists and the Mujahedeen. And in Iran the unfortunate Baha’is - men, women and children - are martyred for their faith.

Do we want the days of the Tudors to come back and flames rekindled at Amersham or Oxford?

No- one should suppose that tolerance and indifference are one and the same.

The tolerance, in which I believe, means respect to others and for all God’s creation- man and beast and plant.

It also means love for one’s neighbour but, as Shakespeare wrote; Man proud man, dressed in a little brief authority, plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven as makes the angels weep”.

K.M.D. Dunbar Firethorn
London Road Aston Clinton Buckinghamshire.

The Lord, through Malcolm Kirkham, encouraged me. I was move to write my reply to the newspaper and it appeared on the 27th October 1983, which was as follows:

Cannot Remain Silent

Sir, - I did not wish to provoke hatred, violence or anger when making my protest over a popish person now conducting the mass at the Anglican Church at St. Albans.

Can it not be seen my actions were of those of a loving and faithful Christian? All Christians believe, “faithful are the wounds of a friend “.

My protest was based on the fact that the Roman Catholic Mass has no place in the Christian Church since it is a blasphemy against the Lord Jesus Christ. (Article 31 Church of England).

The Roman Catholic Church proclaims a person cannot be saved unless he partakes of the sacrifice of the mass, nor experience the salvation of the Lord Jesus Christ.

My concern was for those newly seeking the Lord Jesus Christ and to indicate to them the devices of those who should know better.

I have a wife and family and twins on the way.

I have a responsible lecturing post and teach people of all ages. I am experienced in danger and believe I should point out such dangers to the innocent.

I am currently teaching the gospel to a now reformed drug pusher, criminal and convict. Directing him and his wife unto the Lord Jesus Christ the saviour and not the Mass or any other device of men.

To Cecilia Brooks and K.M. Dunbar, who believe many were horrified and dismayed, may I say I think not but be consoled with the words of a wise man (Acts 5.38) “Refrain from these fears and anxieties for if my actions be merely of myself it will come to naught: but if it be of God, ye cannot over throw it, lest happily, ye be found even to speak evil of the evil wind, that is said to be blowing, when in fact it is the Spirit of God.

As a preacher of Christ’s love to men, I cannot remain silent but must oppose those kisses, though ever so sweet are deceitful.

My home is open to all that are genuinely seeking the truth as in the Lord Jesus Christ.

You may come to see the church at Bierton as well to hear the Word of God spoken.

DAVID CLARKE (Minister of the Gospel)
27/10/83

26 Waddesdon Strict Baptist Chapel

In 1984 a Mr. Rose of Luton, a former trustee of the Waddesdon Hill Strict Baptist Chapel wrote to me whilst I was living at Bierton. Asking if we at Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church would wish to hold evangelistic meetings at the Waddesdon Strict Baptist Chapel during the time when Billy Graham was preaching in England and Mission England was going on. He suggested I wrote to the new Trustees who were now the Metropolitan Association of Strict Baptist Churches.

Our church at Bierton would not be interested in Billy Graham or want anything to do with Mission England because of their Arminian ways, so I wrote to the Trustees explaining what had happened and asked if few others and I could use the chapel during this period to preach the gospel. I explained this was Mr. Roses request and I was very willing to be involved. I explained we had a few Christian friends who would wish to be involved including the church at Eaton Bray.

The Waddesdon Hill chapel was a very quaint chapel out on its own along the village road in

Waddesdon. It had closed down due to too few people attending. Each year since 1976 I had attended an anniversary service there conducted by a Mr. Collier, minister of Linslaid Strict Baptist church then Mr. Hill of the Luton Strict Baptist church.

Waddesdon Hill Gospel Standard Chapel



Waddesdon Hill Strict Baptist Chapel (G S)
Association of Metropolitan

I sent the following letter to the chairman of the trust.

Dear Mr. Knight

27/4/1984

With reference to our telephone conversation of Tuesday I write on behalf of a number of people with a request to hold public meetings for the purpose of preaching the Word of God and worship at the chapel situated at Waddesdon Hill.

This initial proposal is to hold three of four meetings during the summer months, say the 1st Saturday of each month, June, July, August and September, in the PM.

I am a Particular Baptist (and minister of the Gospel) in membership of Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church. Whilst our church does not wish to be responsible for such meetings they have no objection to my personal involvement and organization of any such meetings.

Enclosed is a subscriber list of names offering mutual help and support.

I understand you are to meet shortly and we would be grateful if permission could be granted to our request. If this is possible may we have a copy of the “Articles of Faith” and clauses in the trust deed with your reply?

Yours Sincerely,

David Clarke.

My request turned down

My request was turned down, as they wanted a properly formed church to take over the chapel such as the Limes Avenue Strict Baptist Church. I found this way of doing things very chilling and help formed my view of such organized associations. I would not commend them.

Try To Buy the Waddesdon Hill Chapel

Shortly after this after I had succeeded from the Bierton chapel and a few of us were meeting in our home at Bierton I was informed the Waddesdon Hill Chapel was up for sale. I thought perhaps this was a way forward and we could use the chapel to meet in and we may be in the position to form a church.

I wrote to the trustee’s explaining my situation. I asked them to forward me a copy of the trust deed as I felt since I had attended the meetings held by the former trustee’s it was quite probable that we would qualify to use the chapel if we fitted the characters of those set out in the trust deed.

I was invited to meet with the committee and put forward my case and during meeting one of the trustees said they wanted some one dynamic to go into Waddesdon village and make an impact. I thought this was not how I saw things. God was well able to do it his way. I replied it sounded as though he wanted the Lord Jesus to go there.

I am offered the chapel on unsatisfactory terms

I was offered the chapel on the basis that I form a church using their confession of faith, which was the 1966 Strict Baptist Confession. I said I could not do that because I believed them to be wrong but would be able to do so if they were, as the Gospel Standard Articles, without those added ones. My request and offer was turned down.

I offer to buy the chapel for 1 penny more than the highest bidder Not being prepared to let it go, I offered to buy the chapel and since they were going to sell it I would offer one penny more that the highest bidder. They were not prepared to do this. So I left it.

27 Truth Causes A Division

Luke 2. 51

This section deals with those issues that I would not normally publish. However as a result of the very serious doctrinal errors and practice that I encountered

I am fully persuaded that it is right to publish them as a warning for others. The following is an account of an issue that resulted in me withdrawing from the communion, over matters of conscience, due to the unresolved churches issues and departure from the truth and misconduct of the church.

The following sermon notes were made before and after I preached at the weeknight meeting, at the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Chapel, on Wednesday the 20th of April 1983. I believe that sermon was the instrument laid at the root of the error, which caused the division, and parting of the ways between the Bierton Church and I. This led to my secession on the 26th of June 1984.

Particular Redemption

I had clearly spoken on the subject of particular redemption and providentially one sermon was recorded and can be heard on YouTube:

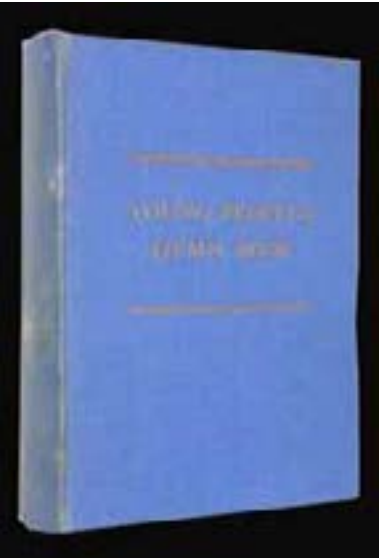
[A sermon preached a defence of Particular Redemption 1983 \(Click here\)](#)

On Wednesday, the 20th of April, I preached a sermon, during our week evening meeting. The text being, this is a faithful saying and these things I will that thou affirm constantly. That they, which have believed in God, might be careful to maintain good works’ (Titus 3 8).

In my attempt to apply the truth of this text, bearing in mind the current needs and position of our church at Bierton, I gave examples, by way of direct application.

I stated how we might be found to take heed to this exhortation if we restored a suitable children’s hymn book which did not contain hymns expressing general redemption & universal redeeming love to all children. Some how a blue children’s hymnbook, published by the Metropolitan Association of Strict Baptists Sunday schools, had been introduced to the Sunday school. I stated also it would be a good work to set our church in order even though some would not credit this to be a good work. That in this pursuit there may be a thing not acceptable to our natural carnal desires and us as individuals.

The National Association of Strict Baptist Sunday



The Children’s Hymn Book

The examples given in order

We had no ruling authority and needed a pastor or minister for teaching and ruling well.

We should teach truth in our Sunday school and not error as was being taught by Mr King, such as “universal redeeming love” for all children. I asserted it was wrong to teach the children or led them to believe in general redemption and that a step to avoid this would be to restore a suitable hymnbook, which was in accordance with our own Confession of Faith..

Effects of this address During this address I observed the countenance of Mr. King who shook his head from Side to side. This was at the point that I said it was heresy to teach the children Jesus died for them each one. He said, at another time, he knew not by what spirit I spoke that evening. Mr King was the only other male member of the church and had been sent by the church as a minister to preach. I do not know how long he had been a minister or when he was sent to preach but as such he was responsible for the things he taught.

A Church Meeting To Resolve The Issue

Mrs. Gurney after the meeting asked when we could have a church meeting to discuss these matters. Our quarterly meeting was due to be held that April so we booked the 27th day of April at 2:30 pm. At this meeting Mr. King red from the 23rd Psalm and was our appointed chairman. Mr King was a sent minister of our church and had been then one to propose

that we become a Gospel Standard cause. He was a responsible adult and church member.

The chairman (Mr King) made introductory comments regarding his position as chairman and that by the next church meeting he would have fulfilled that office for one year and that he wished the church to seek a chairman to succeed him. This was because he could not conduct church affairs whilst there were disagreements amongst the members.

Chairman refuses to allow discussion causing Concern.

The chairman expressed his disapproval of the matter to be discussed since he said this matter could not be raised since, as it was contrary to the rule 15 of the Gospel Standard rule book of which we were governed. He stated Mr. D Clarke was out of order and must have the permission of the church to discuss this matter.

Mr. D Clarke expressed his view, that since it was a case of serious disorder and the Cause of truth would suffer prejudice if left for one month, rule 15 allowed for his action. Also that it would be wrong to leave the church for a whole month with such a charge being unanswered. (P.S. I believed, at the time, this delay was a tactic of Satan and so I then Devil was resisted, in the same way as Cromwell resisted and deposed the ruling king of England, who maintained “the divine right of a king to rule in unrighteousness”.

Mr King Honourable Dismissal

to leave the church

Mr King asked for an honourable dismissal from membership. How ever I informed him, at the church meeting, he could not be given leave with honour unless he move to other church of the same faith and order, simply because he would not be subject to a lawful enquiry of the church as to the doctrines he was advancing. **See our Gospel Standard rules of conduct Rule 15.**

Chairman Comments Upon The Sermon

The chairman stated that I had made serious charges against the Bierton church and that he wished the ‘ chair ‘ to be respected and honoured by this ruling authority .

Chair opposed

After general matters had been discussed and church business had finished Mr. D. Clarke opposed the Chairman regarding the sermon preached

explaining he wished the church to give their opinion as to their belief in respect of teaching the children and their unconverted Parents, at the Sunday school Good Friday meetings. This was because general redemption in opposition to particular redemption was being taught. I said my charge of them teaching heresy was justifiable for Mr. King had said himself, at the Good Friday service both last year and this year, Jesus had died for each one of the children. Also they were teaching the children to sing Jesus had died for them and he loves them all.

The matter was not resolved at that meeting so I gave the chair back to Mr King to conclude the meeting.

The Holy Table (No idolatry Here)

After the issue of the hymn book and my defence of particular redemption that matter regarding the Holy Table arose again. I also wrote to Mrs. Evered, in order to discuss and explore the matter further. This was because this matter was so serious it needed to be put right. Mrs Evered should have known better, after all it was here declared her intention to return the Bierton Church to true Christian practice and preserve the traditions that she had held from a girl now we were amongst Gospel Standard Baptists. She returned the letter to me unread. She informed me she knew the truth and nothing would change her mind. She inferred that I was young and did not know these things as she had been brought up with the truth.

This was blatant idolatry that could not be ignored. This whole matter and my attempts to resolve these serious issues are recorded in detail, along with all the correspondence to all concerned, in my publication, **‘The Bierton Crisis’, published in 1984”.**

I Preach A Moving Sermon in 1983

On the 26th October 1983 I had the responsibility to lead the prayer meeting on the Wednesday evening and speak from the scriptures as I felt lead. On this occasion four of the congregation got up and left, my sermon was obviously was a moving sermon.

Essence of the sermon: The Chapel not the House of God.

I explained I had been called by grace 14 years ago and had testified to them of the goodness of God to me. That was in saving me from a life of crime, drug taking etc. I had learned about Jesus through reading the bible. I recalled the facts that I had come to the

Bierton church because they too had knowledge of the truth of Jesus Christ, his dying for our sins. His justifying righteousness, and the Sovereignty of God in all his work towards us.

I said I believed God had called me to preach the Gospel of Jesus Christ and I had responsibilities to them all to make known what God had shown me.

I said the building was not the “House of God”. There were no such things as holy tables etc. and we must not reverence these things as was common amongst Roman Catholics.

At this point a member of the church shouted out. “Well is not this the house of God” pointing to the roof of the building. Then another rose to their feet saying this is just like a church meeting and walked out. Then two other persons, Mr. King and his wife and John Snuggs got up and left.

I was staggered and alarmed for I had not risen my voice, not spoke severely or in a hard way. Never the less the truth as revealed in Jesus Christ had provoked this reaction.

From that time Mr King withdrew from fellowship and no longer attended our meetings.

I then recalled a dream that I had had previously and it had now come to pass.

I had previously spoken to Mr Collier about the problems that had arisen at Bierton regarding Mr King teaching general redemption and I had requested our church to invite him to help resolve those issues at our church. However Mr King did not wish him to be involved and the matter never was resolved. Mr Collier stated that we must change the hymnbook, as what we had was wrong.

Mr Collier Dies

It was a sad loss for us at Bierton in 1982 when Mr Collier died he had been a great help to me and the church at Bierton. Many people attended his funeral and Paul Watts his grand son and Dr Ian Paisley the minister of the Free Presbyterian Church of Northern Ireland conducted this. Mr Collier had been a good friend and helper to the church at Bierton and he was surely to be missed.

Mr Crane of Lakenheath

Appointed Our Overseer

During this very difficult period Mr Crane responded to our request for help to resolve our difficulties and he did a very good job, and the best

he could. However matters were never resolved during the time I remained in membership. We went to several church meetings in order to resolve issues that had arisen but unfortunately they were never resolved. Mean while other issues began to arise that needed to be dealt with.

Requested Help With Article 26

It was during my first year of preaching that I met Stephen Royce at the Eaton Bray Chapel at Eddelesborough. His parents were members of the Watford Strict and Particular Baptist Church and he was very keen to hear the things of God. At that time he and his wife was attending the Bethel Strict and Particular Baptist Chapel along with his wife and children. It soon became apparent he had believed and trusted in the Lord Jesus for salvation and I encourage him to join the church he was attending. Unfortunately for him he was presented with a problem because he found the wording of the Gospel Standard Added Articles in accurate, at best, and wished to come to terms with their meaning. He reason that because I was a sent minister from a Gospel Standard Church then I would be the ideal person to assist in resolving his dilemma. The particular article was number 26. He was informed that unless he could subscribe to them without hesitation or question then the minister of the Church would not put he forward as a candidate for church membership.

I really understood his difficulties, as I too had to deal with the same issues when our church at Bierton became a Gospel Standard listed Church. It is a very serious thing to adopt articles of religion that affect our conduct and practice in connection with other people. The way I dealt with the problem has been recorded in The Bierton Crisis under the chapter The Gospel Standard Article of Religion. My experience with the many and varied religious groups and opinions of the day served to ensure that I had an informed mind and conscience regarding Articles of Religion and practical conduct.

Mr Stephen Royce had a valid point and his questioning and concerns were valid. He deserved a good answer, so I did the best I could. See the Bierton Crisis for my answer.

I Am Asked To Help

It was because of Stephens’s difficulty of just accepting these articles, without question he wrote to

me and we discussed the whole matter. I in turn wrote my reply and suggestions as to how he could deal with the matter, I understood his problem completely and it was a real matter that needed to be resolved and not brushed away as though it did not matter. It did. My response and answer to Stephen is recorded in my book, The Bierton Crisis.

Stephen found this hindrance, preventing him form being baptized, a real Burdon which had been placed upon his shoulders. In order to obey the Lord he requested just baptism rather than full church membership but this was refused without any scriptural reason why not. His response to a question that really was being asked by him was, what doth hinder me from being baptized.

What Doth Hinder Me Being Baptized

The answer he received was his inability to agree to something the he, in conscience, could not agreed with out adequate clarification, and a definitive clear statement of truth regarding the matter, prevented him from being baptised. I trusted that my answer to him was sufficient. You will have to ask him. In the end another minister baptized him and he was not required to become a member of a church.

Paul Rowland Singing of Psalms

One of our visiting ministers was Mr Paul Rowland who expressed his objection to the singing of hymns rather than the psalms. Mr Rowland also worked as a buyer for the Trinitarian Bible Society. I had no problem in the singing of psalms and was very interested in his objections, which were a matter of conscience. He also expressed his objections to the added articles of the Gospel Standard to which by now I was no stranger. As the secretary of the church I was responsible fro engaging our ministers. In order to accommodate Mr Rowland problems regarding the singing of psalms I agreed for him to provide us with psalm books and we sang psalms rather that songs from our Denham’s Collection called the “Saint’s Melodies”.

It was interesting to talk to Paul as he also expressed his belief that the Presbyterian System was more scriptural and of course I had meet some Presbyterians when visiting the Isle of Skye but believed them to be wrong on several issues.

Linslaid and Children’s Hymns

Soon after Mr Collier died we joined their members

on their Lords Day afternoon meetings. It was good to meet other believes and I had been invited to join them by Peter Janes. However I was surprised to realize that one of the ladies had chosen a children’s hymn just like Bierton which taught general redemption and I began to realize things were not as it appeared and began to think was this replicated in other strict Baptist churches and was this just the tip of the ice burg ?

Meeting Richard Bolt

At this time I met an old acquaintance, a Christian man called Dr. John Verna who too had met Mr John Metcalfe. I had first met him when I first became a Christian, at the age of 20. He was a Doctor working at Stoke Mandeville Hospital working in particular with paraplegic patients. He used to help with the Hospital outreach meetings, which were held every month at the hospital. Several Christians from various churches had joined a group of Christian from the Assemblies of God Church in Aylesbury, to reach patients detained in Hospital. Each month patients were individually invited to the Saturday night gospel meeting held specifically for patients and staff in the Archery unit of the paraplegics department. They would be collected from the various wards in their beds and a different speaker, each month, would give a gospel address and we would pray for them.

Dr. John Verna and his wife helped and encouraged and worked with this group of Christians.

I talked with John about my position at Bierton Church and he seemed keen to help and support me. He introduced me to a dear friend of his a Mr. Richard Bolt from a place in Kent near Matfield. John Verna believed Richard Bolt to have an apostolic ministry.

He and Richard Bolt came to my home and we spent quite some time together and I was encouraged by them both to continue to seek God for direction. Richard Bolt was a very straightforward man, direct encouraging and thoughtful. A man of conviction And I believed had the fear of the Lord. I respected him for his honesty and sincerity. It was good to meet him.

I expressed my misgivings about my dealings in the Pentecostal Churches and my new position in the Strict and Particular Baptist church.

Both groups it had occurred to me went to extremes. One held to the belief in the gifts of the supernatural gifts and Baptism in the Holy Ghost (Spirit) and looked for and expected manifestations

of spiritual gifts in believers including the working of miracles (Pentecostal). They were very subjective and looked inward to them selves for the evidence of God working in and through them. Whilst the other group (Strict Baptists) denied the operation of supernatural operation of spiritual gift such as speaking in tongues and gifts of healing etc. but rather looked inwardly to the evidence of Gods dealing with them by how unworthy they might feel to receive any thing from God. That doubts of salvation were a good sign and an evidence of faith rather than presumption. Both group depended on God the Holy Ghost to work and save. I had concluded both groups could go to extremes.

Both Richard Bolt and John were convinced of the supernatural baptism in the Holy Ghost (spirit) and looked for and expected God to operate the nine gifts of the Spirit including the working of miracles according to Mark 16 verse 17. They believed in the fullness of New Testament Christianity and I was keen to learn and hear even though I was cautious and careful.

One thing I observed was that Richard had lost many of his teeth and I assumed this was because he had believed God for healing and looked to God for divine health. I thought to my self that if Christian were to expect and experience divine healing in this day and age then how come Richard had so few teeth. I did not ask him about his teeth, as I did not know him sufficiently to ask such a direct and personal question.

28 John Metcalfe Tyler’s Green Chapel

Whilst speaking to Dr. John Verna he informed me he and his wife had met with John Metcalf of Penn, near High Wycombe, Buckinghamshire and that some of the people there often had a stall on the Market Square in Aylesbury selling Christian literature and the bibles they sold were only the Authorized King James version.

I was interested and because I had recently picked up a small tract written by John Metcalf called “The Gospel of God”, which was about the claims of the Papacy and John Paul the second. I wished to meet John Metcalf because I recalled our visitor to the Bierton Church James who had attended Mr Metcalf’s ministry and I understood and agreed with his writings in the tract. This had been most helpful and encouraging to me.

John Verna and Richard Bolt left and I felt encouraged by our meeting and I decided to go and

visit the Church at Penn so as to meet Mr. John Metcalfe.

One Sunday evening I decided to go and I took my daughter Esther, she must have been about 3 or 4 years old and we drove to Penn and found the old chapel called Tyler’s Green Chapel, Bethlehem Meeting Hall. Old-fashioned metal railings enclosed it and the gate was locked with no way in to the front door. It felt strange because the people were inside and a meeting was being held. I thought to my self had this door been locked deliberately to give a psychological shock to late comers and the feeling of being locked out as would be the case of the 5 foolish virgins mentioned by Jesus in Matth 25 verse 2).

It was damp outside and getting dark but I was determined to meet Mr. Metcalf so Esther and I waited outside, in the road, until the meeting had finished. Eventually the meeting ended and the people filled out sedately and quietly. I took courage and walked up to the man I believed to be John Metcalfe. Not too tall, well dressed, with a cream or white raincoat and white or grey hair. He was very courteous and when I introduced my self and explained my intent. I asked him about the chapel gates being locked gates he smiled when I explained my thoughts about the 5 foolish virgins. He then explained they locked the gates to prevent vandalism during the meetings, as they had had trouble in the past.

He informed his daughter and noted my persistence in waiting and that I had read his tract on John Paul the II, which seemed to encourage him. He then invited me back to his home for supper.

Esther and I were received graciously and we exchanged much conversation. Mr. Metcalfe’s daughters made a fuss of Esther and gave her chocolate biscuits. I was invited to share my testimony of how I became a Christian and I deliberately decided to tell all that took place the night of my conversion holding nothing back.

(See full account of my conversion). All was very quite and nothing was said that I remember. I explained my present situation at Bierton Strict Baptist Church and the issues I had encountered regarding Particular Redemption, Law and Gospel, Added articles and finally Holy Tables. I was asked about my work and family and I explained I was a Lecturer at Luton College and a minister of the gospel in membership of a Strict Baptist church.

I felt greatly encouraged and noticed how nicely the house was kept. All in a lovely garden, spacious and it was beautiful. It was old and charming just as a Royal house and John Metcalfe kept an Alsatian as a guard dog.

John Metcalfe was a charming person a man of conviction, decisive and uncompromising. He seemed determined to follow God. I liked him and admired these qualities. I felt I could learn many things from this man. He had dealings with the Rev Ian Paisley but opposed him for unknown reasons. He despised the title Dr. and Dr. John Gill for accepting such titles. Also he had known Dr. Martin Lloyd Jones and eminent Christian ministers but opposed many things.

After that evening I returned another time with my wife and we were invited to attend the meeting at Tyler’s Green Chapel one Sunday morning when Mr. Metcalfe would be preaching. It was arranged that one of the members of the church would look after our four children whist we attended that morning meeting. This we did. This was a remarkable sermon and I had never heard such powerful preaching. I was greatly encouraged and I realized later to substance of his sermon was that contained in his publication “ Messiah”. The sermon was eloquent, powerful and I believed very faithful to the word of God. I was greatly encouraged and admired the man and wanted to support his work.

After the meeting I was asked by Mr. Metcalfe how I had got on and he seemed to be looking for feedback. I had become unaccustomed to give any kind of feedback, which could give rise to puff the old man up (rightly or wrongly), so I found this situation awkward. I kept quiet even though I was moved with excitement and wanted to express how well I had got on with the message spoken. It was so encouraging that I wanted to tell all my friends in excitement come and here a man speak the things of God.

Paul Rowland And I Visit John Metcalf

It was shortly after this that Paul Rowland’s, a minister in the Strict Baptist Church, who also worked for the Trinitarian Bible Society, came to preach at Bierton Church. He was a great advocate of the Free Scottish Presbyterian Church system and by conviction would only sing Psalms in Christian meetings. I spoke to Paul about John Metcalfe and invited him to meet him. Mr. Metcalfe seemed interested to meet Paul and I together, so we were invited across to his home at

Penn one evening together.

The Shot Gun And Our Pockets Searched

Paul and I went one evening to John Metcalfe’s home and we were received well and our coats taken to be hung up. We were invited to sit in a large lounge rather like a large study and library. It was beautiful decorated and very eloquent. John Metcalfe was dressed in a smart suit and tie.

John Metcalfe spoke about his work and recent publications the Psalms, Spiritual Songs, and Hymns of the New Testament. Paul Rowland got involved in talk regarding the Presbyterian Church and the Scottish Psalm Book. They soon spoke on doctrinal issues regarding the Law of Moses and legal Righteousness.

Christ Righteousness Imputed

John Metcalfe maintained that he opposed the views put forward by the Calvinistic Presbyterians who maintained the righteousness of Christ (that which he wrought out by obedience to The Law) was our justifying righteousness before God. He said he had had a lot of opposition from the Scottish Churches because he maintained the righteousness of Christ is not mentioned once in the New Testament only the Righteousness of God. This righteousness being distinct from Law.

I was not full well aware at the time of the significance to this distinction and at first did not understand the issue. How ever the evening went well and was very stimulating and not without surprise. John Metcalfe posed us with a question as though it was a riddle asking was the fruit that Adam ate good or bad. It was as though he did not expect us to answer because he reminded us God had said his work was very good. I knew the answer straight away I did not need to think but thinking there must be some reason behind the question I awaited and Paul answered. This answer was not satisfactory to Mr. Metcalfe and the issue was discussed. I did not answer because shortly after this John Metcalfe reached behind a curtain and brought out a shotgun in a dramatic gesture and preceded to take out the cartridges. John Metcalfe was not amused when I laughed in amusement he said he was suspicious of our visit that the IRA had threatened him and had to be very careful. He also had just been informed that our pockets had been searched to check up on us and that tobacco had been found in one of the pockets. Mr. John Metcalfe later used this against the

person in derogatory comments.

Our visit to Mr. Metcalfe was one not to be forgotten and was quite Remarkable.

This cause me to consider many things and I tried to understand and unfathomed the discussion regarding Justification. I had at that time been considering the view of eternal justification of Gods elect. I knew of the controversy of Antinomian and the legalists. I had shared with John Metcalfe a love of the writings of William Huntington and about Martin Luther’s issue of Justification by faith.

It was the misunderstanding of the conversation that he had with Paul Rowland regarding Justification that made me consider the issues that I thought they raised and understood the truth to be. These were:

Justification

1 Gods act of Justification, when viewed from the point before the world existed, was from all eternity. In one sense the elect were justified in Christ from all eternity (in the mind of God). However the work and merits of a justifying righteousness was to be performed in time by none other than our Lord Jesus Christ.

2 He was righteous by virtue of his person and spotless humanity. He did not become righteous by any works of the Law to Moses. He fulfilled the law and walked according to it.

The gentiles were never under the Law of Moses but rather by it excluded from the benefits that the Jews were promised to those who kept it. The Law never promised spiritual blessings only natural ones. All spiritual blessings, such as regeneration, adoption and the gift of faith, came only through the Lord Jesus Christ.

Also the Law of Moses was not, like the Presbyterians Calvinist’s say given to Adam as a rule to be kept and that eternal life promised to those who kept it. It was not.

I understood that in the Lord Jesus’s righteousness sinners are clothed and accepted as righteous before God. This being the righteousness of God imputed to all that believe. This being the source and merits of a believer’s justification.

3 In actual experience how ever, in time, the sentence of Justification takes place upon the person believing God, as Abraham believed God. It is received by faith and takes place in the conscience, when first we believe and receive the Lord Jesus Christ as our

saviour. This is justification by faith. (Rom. 5 verse 1). From this springs the joy of salvation, which of course involves the senses of the soul. This experience is justification by faith.

Justification by Blood

It could only be brought about by blood and made effectual by blood. Jesus himself being made a vicarious sacrifice. That being by the death of Jesus in the cross. By His death our sins are removed and we be made clean from all our sins. (Rom 5 verse 9). Justification being the declaration by God that we, being clothed in the righteousness of Christ, we are counted righteous for Jesus sake.

This was not the issue

I learned later how after this was not the issue with Paul Roland and John Metcalfe.

The follow Saturday morning I had a telephone call from John Metcalfe, I did not realize it was him at first thinking it was Dr. John Verna and I addressed him as John. This did not go down well he said I was being too familiar and I must address him as Mr. Metcalfe. Needless to say I felt awkward and that this man was being unnecessarily rude. We got on to speak about the feedback he wanted and I said I had things to say but would rather wait until I saw him face to face rather than on the telephone. He became very impatient and demanded I say there and then on the telephone what I had to say. I felt threatened and awkward and was not at ease at all. So I decided I would say about the things I found awkward and unacceptable first explaining that the tract he had written was in fact in error.

His reply was, “look mate I have more theology than I would ever have in 1000 years. That my testimony of what Jesus had done for me was disgusting and that I was in the same danger as the Pharisees, which blasphemed the Holy Ghost during the ministry of Jesus. There the conversation ended.

During all this time my wife had been concerned about me becoming involved with the man as she had notice how much and effect he had on me.

That following week I was away on a week’s study at Durham University as I was a student with the Open University. Here I wrote to Mr. John Metcalfe.

My response to John Metcalfe

Dear Mr. Metcalfe

26th July 1984

Further to our telephone conversation I have decided against meeting with you when I return from Durham for the following reasons:

You allow not the children of God to do as the apostle exhorts: “ despise not prophesying. Prove all things; hold fast that which is good. Abstain from all appearance of evil” 1 Thes 5 verse 20 - 22.

My words to you on the telephone were that on the one hand I could rejoice with you thanking God for “ here was a man I respected and trust in the things of God (for various reasons) whilst on the other hand I got cross with you and could take extreme dislike to you for what appeared to be a sinister way, This I took exception too.

Now you did not inquire as to what I meant but rather justified all your ways, methods and actions by stating your beliefs, saying that for the first time I had come under the preaching of the word of God in the unction of the Holy Ghost. That as the opponents of Christ questioned the spirit by which the Lord Jesus performed his mighty works, so too I come very close to their fearful condition.

You then stated your beliefs in respect of my own testimony; either you rejected what I said as true or was in doubt as to its reality and substance (correct me if I am wrong).

I am sorry if I offended you and your family when I gave my testimony, please forgive me. How ever I am not the only believer to speak of vile things. Deut 28 verses 53. Lam 2 verse 26 and Hos 1 verse 2 and many more. Do you impute guilt to these also as you do me? Never the less what I spoke was true and an actual account and not as you seem to imply an opportunity to speak of self. For that true account I offer no apology.

If you reject what I said as truth I protest I am no liar. And if you are in doubts as to the reality well I cannot add to or diminish what the Lord Jesus works or works not. You are entitled to your opinion but pray give me the same liberty to judge you, your preaching, writings and assertions.

I still do not understand your impatience with me questioning you regarding the statement in the tract, “The Gospel of God”.

You say the issue at the Reformation was: Given the merits of Christ person, how are they imputed and his person imparted. Page 33. I said to you. I could understand the statement of “ the merits of Christ’s

person being imputed but not his person imparted.

I gave you room to explain, owned an ignorance and awaited further light and even said I would reconsider the statement. Here however you said you knew more theology in your little finger than I ever would ever know in a 1000 years, given it were possible I should be granted such time; called me mate and kept me at a formal distance.

Well be that as it may I still await a theological precise statement, whether it be in realms of high and heavenly things or in terrestrial ones.

I say persons are communed with and not, with natures, imparted. Neither persons nor natures imputed. I would suggest your tract should read: Given the merits of Christ’s person, how are these imputed and His nature imparted. I say I was not seeking to find faults; it stuck out like a sore thumb, just as my incorrect spelling may do.

Here again I beg your pardon and apologize for any seeming impertinence. I say to you this behaviour of yours displays no humility, of which you say is lacking in me. Also according to your judgment I am not low enough yet before God. You judge by appearances; so do I but are you right? Only God knows the agonies, the heart searching and tears shed since our conversation and that is no pretense.

On these points I have mentioned I beg your reply and answers. For how can two walk together if these differences divide? I certainly have no intention of being your enemy.

You said at one stage you wondered if I be teachable. Well I am allowing my feelings and reason to act in judgment over these issues. This I do as you set the example and encourage, or have I got this wrong as well?

I get excited for you, over the production of the Psalms and hymnbook and would like to have seen them in use. I hope my letter to you now will not cause that breach to prevent it.

I have read your tract 2 and have found both 1 and 2 very relevant, pertinent and well written. They search me. Particularly tract 2 and I find I have walked the path of your tract. May they be blessed of God for the furtherance of the Gospel and the purpose for which they were written?

I could comment on the tract 3 about Taylor Brethren but not unless you wish

Yours very Sincerely.

David Clarke.

Following this letter in hot pursuit I wrote the next letter this would have arrived the next day.

Dear Mr. Metcalfe,

I also think it wrong to speak of the merits of the person of Christ.

The merits of Christ yes! But not the merits of his person. The reason for this is:

As the Son of God he is a divine person. By nature He is God. Essentially God by nature but personally the Son of the Father. To speak then of the merits of a divine person is abhorrent to the delicate and gracious soul for one cannot admit any imperfections in God nor demerit as to perfection’s, councils, actions or purposes. God is by definition essentially righteous. Perfectly just and right in all and in everything. Whether this glory be revealed or veiled always was and ever shall be.

The scripture speaks of the Lord Jesus Christ being the express image of the Fathers person.

I admit a complexity; in that the Lord Jesus Christ is bi natural, that is to say he has two natures. Yet he is but one person, co.-equal with the Father and Holy Ghost. By nature eternally God taking unto into union with himself, at the incarnation, our humanity, that which he was not, becoming truly man. There is now then a union of divine and human natures (never to be dissolved) in the person of the SOn of God, hence Christ Jesus the Lord is a glorious complex person.

We may speak of the merits of Christ Jesus for he is truly a human being, having a real soul created when made man; this man may accrue merit by virtue of living in this world being not only made under the Law of Moses but under every divine rule, him being subject unto his God and Father. The divine servant.

The expression then, “how can the merits of Christ’s person be imputed?” I say is too loose and really the whole quotation should read: given the merits of the Lord Jesus Christ how are they imputed and His nature imparted? This being the question at the Reformation.

If you think I am being nit picking then what kind of 1000-year theological course do you advocate as being worthwhile.

I write this way because I trust it will be of help to you. You certainly have helped me in causing

me to consider many things. I also add I stand to be corrected and ask you to do so.

I expect I have touched on your doctrine of justification and perhaps you have deliberately phrased your statement in the tract the way you have because they reflect your views of justification. Am I right?

Please excuse this hurried note but I must write, as I am able. Yours Sincerely

David Clarke

Durham. 25th July 1984.

My two letters were returned with no comments. I took it that that was meant to express he rejected my observations or council, against himself.

29 I leave the Bierton Church

The events, which had taken place in our Bierton Church, had convinced me Satan’s kingdom was being plundered. I had been instrumental in causing no small stir in the church. By October 1983 of that year the church was dysfunctional.

I had been engaged to preach and to conduct the communion service but felt unable to do so because in conscience it wrong for me to do so. This was because the communion represented the common fellowship we all had in Christ but our fellowship due to these severe difficulties divided our church. I believed until the issues were sorted out and the church was in order and of one mind in the Lord, it would be wrong for me to conduct the communion service.

Mrs. Evered, the person who had objected to the term’s evangelical repentance, of course had pointed the finger at me. The incident regarding evangelical repentance was another serious issue, which I deal with in **“The Bierton Crisis”**. It was said I caused these difficulties since April 1983 as I had written to Mr. King, a member of our church, and a sent preacher from the church. Mr. King had been advancing views of general redemption, which I objected too and opposed him.

Our articles of Faith clearly stated a belief in particular redemption and also Mr king and Mrs Evered had been the ones to propose and second we join the Gospel Standard. So they had no excuse due to ignorance. I had attempted to correct these errors by speaking to Mr. King personally and finally ended up writing to him and also to Mrs Evered so

as to make it quite clear what I was saying and found unacceptable. This letter was said by Mr. King to be, “Full of condemnation” and Mr. King had read parts of that letter to the church before he resigned. This letter is recorded in “The Bierton Crisis” and Mrs Evered had returned my letter that I had given her unread.

Not only this but the issue of Ladies wearing hats- I say head covering- had surfaced (not that I was against women wearing a head covering as the scripture taught this) but rather against this insistence of ensuring visiting unbelievers wearing them. Then there was the issue of “The Holy Table” all of which were heretical views and introduce by Mrs Evered, the church member who had insisted she knew best, and had known the truth since a girl.

I actually felt the old serpent there and I was about to stamp on the Old Serpent. Looking back I realize I had been contending not against flesh and blood but against those principalities and powers, which had kept many believers in bondage and chains.

I felt in the end it was me that was causing the trouble at the church and I should leave things alone. I now believe, on reflection that was a satanic suggestion. I had been standing for the truths of the Lord Jesus Christ but had met with all kinds of false religious spirits all of which, I was naming and opposing.

I Secede from the Bierton Church

From that meeting at the Bierton Church in April 27th 1983 until the 26th June 1984 when I seceded from the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church.

I contended for the truth of the gospel of Christ our with our church members, in particular with Mr King and Mrs Evered, regarding these very serious errors in belief and practice.

The whole of the matter I wrote about and published my article to all our Trustees and all persons connected with the controversy. This Publication was privately published in 1984 and circulated personally by me to all concerned and entitled “The Bierton Crisis”.

This ended in me seceding from the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church on 26th June 1984. I did this because I saw no hope if people wished to remain in darkness. I could not act in faith by staying in a situation I believe I should withdraw from. According to our rule the church could have dishonourably dismissed me and my wife for the none attendance

of the church communion, from membership but as no doubt advised by Mr Paul Crane our elected over seer, they had no real grounds. Neither my wife, Mr king, or me were dishonourably dismissed from membership of the church.

I inform all our trustees of my actions

I felt is my responsibility to inform our trustees of the whole matter and this record, and report, is contained in **“The Bierton Crisis”**.

I Preach at Home

Having left the Bierton church I found it very difficult to adjust to our new situation. I considered going to another church but where was the question. In the mean while we met at home and I preached to my family and friends on Sunday mornings. I felt I had been under siege and my home was now my refuge. I was now preaching in the same room that Gordon Ferguson had preached during 1982 when we considered the times and imminent visit to the uK of the Pope of Rome.

I did however believe we should be in a local church but where could we join. I was very aware of the failing in the Gospel Standard way of things as they were at Bierton. Bierton church had in fact fallen from the way of grace of God. Even though their words were full of the language. Their Articles of Faith were clear that the Gospel is the rule of life for the believer but in practice the Law of Moses and their own tradition had become law. Also the position of their added articles was very shaky and I found them inappropriate to adopt as a confession of faith. We found ourselves unchurched and I believed we should do something about it.

I have written about this in my article “The Bierton Crisis”. See appendix.

I sought God in prayer and felt we should be prepared to move house and job in order to be in a church where God wanted us to be.

I Experience Anxiety

After the conflict at Bierton and my seeking to know the mind of God and seeking His direction I began to feel very weak and fearful. I began to fear going out to preach. I soon was unable to face going out to fulfill those preaching engagements. I did not feel it right to go preaching and get other churches unnecessarily involved in judging the issues that I had with the church at Bierton. There appeared to be just

too much to deal with. I became fearful and it crippled or disabled. I felt like I was having a breakdown of some kind. I just did not know how to cope. I was not managing and I needed help. The conflict with John Metcalfe made me very cautious.

A Very Serious Issue Occurs

At this time a very serious matter occurred, which affected my whole family and others and required the involvement of the police. I now realize that had we been in a functioning church the matter could have been dealt with. A Strict Communion church order would have been a safeguard and a help to resolves such an issue. I am prepared to share this matter with any one on a private basis if it will help as it is very serious and such matters cannot be ignored.

I Learn The Sense of Strict Communion

It was this event that led me to see the sense of strict communion, as the church had the power to deal with such an issue when the law of the land failed.

A City Whose Builder And Maker Is God

I felt compelled to write, The Bierton Crisis” and circulated it to all who were effected as I believed not only had I been called to preach but was also set for a defence and confirmation of the Gospel. I was to learn again that those things that had happened to me were to turn our for the furtherance of the Gospel. Phil 1 verse 12. But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel;

David Oldham Pastor of Evington offers help

After the publication of, ‘The Bierton Crisis”, Mr David Oldham, pastor of Stamford and Evington Strict and Particular Baptist Churches invited me to spent the day with him at Leicester and we were able to talk through some of the issues that I had written about. I was very thankful for this help, as I felt at that time so alone.

I Seek a City

30 The Bierton Society of Strict

And Particular Baptists

Our Articles of Religion

Founded in 1831 (Indenture)

And whereas certain persons meet together, and with the blessing of God, will continue to meet together, for the purpose of divine worship, at a chapel or place of worship adjoining the said hereditament

and called the Bierton Baptist Chapel and the said persons call them selves “The Society of Particular Baptists” and such persons are herein after meant and referred to by the expression of “The Church” and the said persons believe and pledge themselves to the promulgation and support of the tenets or articles of faith herein after set forth, that is to say,

1 They believe that the scriptures of the Old and New Testaments are given by inspiration of God and are the only rule of faith and practice and that these scriptures reveal the one true and only God who is self-existent, infinite and eternal. That there are three self existent co-eternal persons in the Godhead namely the Father the Son and the Holy Ghost and these three are one God and that the Lord Jesus Christ is very God and very man in one glorious complex person.

2 That Before the world began God did elect a certain number of the human race unto everlasting life and salvation whom He did predestine to the adoption of Children by Jesus Christ of his own free grace and according to the good pleasure of His will.

3 That God created Adam upright and all his posterity fell in him, he being the federal head and representative of all mankind.

4 That the Lord Jesus Christ in the fullness of time became incarnate and that he really suffered and died as the substitute for the elect of God only and in their stead whereby he made all the satisfaction for their sins which the law and justice of God could require as well as made a way for the bestowments of all those blessings which are needful for them for time and eternity.

5 That the eternal redemption which Christ hath obtained by the shedding of his blood is special and particular that it is only and intentionally designed for the elect of God who only can share its spiritual blessings.

6 That the justification of Gods elect is only by the righteousness of Christ imputed to them and received by faith without consideration of any works of righteousness done by them and that the full and free pardon of all there sins and transgressions is only through the full free pardon of all their sins and transgressions is only through the blood of Christ according to the riches of Gods grace.

7 That regeneration, conversion, sanctification and faith are the work of the Almighty efficacious and

invincible grace of God the Holy Ghost.

8 That all those chosen by the Father, redeemed by the Son and sanctified by the Spirit shall certainly and finally persevere unto eternal life.

9 That there is a resurrection of the dead both of the just and the unjust and that Christ will come a second time to judge the quick and the dead when he will consign the wicked to everlasting punishment and introduce His own people into his kingdom and Glory where they shall be for ever with Him.

Custom and Practice

That baptism of believers by immersion and the Lords Supper are ordinances of Christ to be continued until His coming again and that the former is absolutely requisite to the latter, that is to say that only those are to be admitted as members of the church and participate in its privileges including the ordinance of the Lords supper who upon profession of their faith have been baptized namely immersed in water in the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost. And that no person who has not been baptized as afore said shall on any account be permitted to sit down or commune at the “Lords table” within the said school room and whereas for the purpose of giving effect to the objects and intentions of the parties hereto and of the said church it has been agreed that the said hereditaments shall be conveyed to the trustees upon the trust and for the purpose hereinafter contained and these present have been approved by the members of the said Church meeting called for that purpose and held at the said chapel on or before the date hereof.

The Indenture Further Witnesses

1 That in further pursuance and consideration of the premises they the Trustees do hereby severally covenant and agree amongst themselves and with each other and with the church that they the trustees their successors and assigns shall and henceforth stand and be possessed of the hereditament And premises hereinbefore conveyed unto them un trust to dedicate and devote and preserve the same for the purpose of holy and divine according to the tenets or articles of faith herein set forth.

2 That the election of any future pastor of the said church and the removal of any pastor shall be decided by the vote of two thirds of the church assembled at a regularly convened church meeting together with the object for which it is convened having been publicly announce for four successive Lords days. No member

eligible to vote has to have been four times to the Lords table in six months unless prevented by illness etc.

3 No minister shall be elected to the pastoral office or continue therein but such as holds to the doctrines and communion aforesaid nor shall it be lawful for the said church to receive into fellowship any such persons as members but such as have been baptized that is by immersed in water upon confession of their faith in Christ and are able to give some satisfactory account of a work of grace having passed upon their souls in being called out of darkness into Gods marvellous light, nor shall it be lawful for the said church to admit to her communion (in which term is include the ordinance of the Lords supper) any person who has not been baptized by immersion in water on a profession of faith in the name of Jesus.

31 The Closure of the Bierton Chapel

I had seceded from the Bierton church with my eyes towards heaven looking for that Heavenly City whose builder and maker was God. I was then plunged into many trials and difficulties that cause me to question everything about my experience and understanding of God and my standing as a believer all of which I write about in my book “*The Fall Desperation and Recovery*”,

Despite my failing and falls, these dealings of God with my life, since June 1984 are fully recorded and have written in my first book “*Converted on LSD Trip*” and “*The Bierton Crisis*”. Please read in the Appendix at the end of this book.

Closure of the Chapel

A period of many years past until December, 2002 when Mr King, being a trustee of the chapel, closed the Bierton Chapel for worship, as the last of our senior members had died.

This occurred whilst I was on mission work in the Philippines preaching and teaching the gospel in the Jails. All of which I write about in the next part of the story.

Secession

You will recall that Mr king seceded from our church in 1983, as I did in 1984, but we remained members of the church as our membership was not terminated by the church. Mr King was not prepared to give an account of his the reasons for teaching general redemption. Never the less he remained a

member of the church, as the Church. He was a trustee along with Mr Janes from Eaton Bray, Mr Martin of Northamptonshire and Mr Baumber from Bedford. I too remained a member of the church, and remain so even after the last member died in December 2002, I later learned that all our trustees changed their doctrinal views and did not support our church being a Gospel Standard cause and it was for this reason a serious issue occurred that I will relate I due course.

Our Move to Snailbeach

Lord’s Hill Baptist Church

About that time I heard about a minister called Peter Hallihand who was a Baptist pastor of a church in Shropshire and he also was a representative of the Trinitarian Bible Society. He was preaching at a meeting in Dunstable and Mr Oldham of Leicester had also spoke well of him.

I went to hear him preach and shortly afterward we decided to visit him in Shropshire to outline our position. It was soon evident to me that if the church where Peter Hallihand was the pastor was in Bierton I would feel it right to be joining the Lordshill Church but we lived in Bierton and this Church was in Snailbeach, Shropshire. We both felt persuaded that we should move house and I should change my job if it was the Lord’s will that we should join that church. I felt that if God was directing us this way, and I must make the moves and the way would be opened up to us.

The Chapel



Lordshill Chapel Snailbeach

We advertised the house for £97500 but dropped the price in to £92000 in order to sell. We were able to buy a three-bedroom bungalow for £37000 cash in Snailbeach, Shropshire. We moved in January 1986

and in order join the church. We were both very hopeful expectant and looked to God for support.

Our House



Our House In Snailbeach

I still worked at Luton and travelled there each Monday morning and returned to Snailbeach at the weekend. I stayed with Steven Royce and his family during the week and travelled home at weekends. I had hopes to obtain a lecturing job in one of the colleges in Shropshire.

- Became depressed
- Decided to move back to Luton
- Graham Gardens
- I recover from depression
- Satellite TV
- Paid To Leave

Second Bout Of Depression

It was shortly after this that my agony began and I really began to fell the effects of my depression. I never did get work in Shropshire and it never happened. I had attended three interviews, at three colleges, but failed to get any of the jobs - I wondered what God was doing. That year I missed out on my first promotion at work because they understood I was intending to move away. This knowledge all added to the aggravation I later began to feel.

During this time I experienced awful agonies of fear and doubts etc. I began to believe I was like King Saul in the Old Testament, and the Lord had rejected me. I began to think that all my experience of God was of the flesh and not of God. I felt what I thought an Apostate would feel and that just added to my agony. I felt alone, isolated and very depressed. Depression set in and Steven Royce began to call me Mephibosheth, as he was a son of king Saul, who had gone to live at Lo-debar. (When I look back that was

a very good description of my situation and position). I had never heard of the term manic depression, or bipolar mood swings, but on reflection and after being clinically diagnosed with manic depression I realised this experience was part and parcel of my mental condition at that time.

My wife also became very depressed and suffered all kinds of agonies. On a number of occasions she would ring me at work crying about the difficulties she faced. Isaac was being bullied severely and she couldn’t cope. She felt hostility from some in the church and did not know how to manage. It all became too much.

I stayed at the Royce’s for a period of 18 months during the week, whilst I worked at Luton College and travelled home to Shropshire at the weekend. I hated the journey and very often on the way back to work on a Monday morning I would have to stop and seek God for strength to continue. I was feeling so ill through depression. I began to feel that I had been cast away by God and was in the similar position as King Saul, in the Old Testament, having begun well but was later rejected by God. I felt as I thought an Apostate would feel, which in turn cast me down even further. I wanted to die.

32 We Move to Luton

During the time at Shropshire I tried to assess where had all my contending come too, and began to question many things. I was far from happy. And I felt forsaken by God.

It was then I decided to put family and myself first and move back to Luton where I had work. I felt in my soul I would answer to God for my decision as I felt I was going against what I believed He taught in the scripture that was to seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness and then all these things will be added unto me. I thought we should put church membership first then family. From here I would try and sort out church after we were living together as a family. I had always believed we should put the things of God first and God will look after you.

I hated living like I was away from my home and family. When we were at Bierton I had always been able to read and pray each day, as the head of my family before they went to school but now we were fragmented. I hated it. I felt I should be with my family and not living like we were.

The prices of houses in the South were rising

rapidly whilst those in Shropshire and in Snailbeach, where we lived were hardly moving at all. To give you some idea we had sold our house in Bierton for £92,000 in December 1995. This was a lovely 4 bedroom detached chalet bungalow with double gates and half moon drive way. We owned this house apart from a £24,000 mortgage.

We were able to purchase a three bedroom detached bungalow in Snailbeach for £37,000, which we purchased out right with no mortgage.

When we came to sell it and move back to Luton in 1988 it was sold for £41,000. This value had risen by £4000. At that time we bought Graham Gardens for £78,000 and had to raise £42,000 by way of mortgage. This was only a small 3 bedroom detached house however the awful thing to us was our old house in Bierton was up for sale for £199,000. These house prices had risen so much due to inflation we had to buy a house way down on valuation the list. Had we stayed at Bierton we would have owned a house worth nearly £200,000 or alternatively moved from Bierton to Luton we could have owned the Luton house with no mortgage. Instead we were in an inferior house worth only £78,000 but with a mortgage of £42,000.

Both my wife and I found this difficult to swallow and I felt robbed. This was to be a hurt to me for many years.

Whilst at Luton I began to recover but was still unhappy about the church situation.

I did not fell ready to re enter the Gospel Standard cultural set up due to the awful problems I had encountered whilst at Bierton. At the same time I was not free to get involved in churches which where not Calvinistic due to my experience in the Pentecostal Holiness Church. So we found our selves un-churched again. However I began to feel a lot better coming out of sever depression and I began to enjoy the simple things in life again and I could smile once more.

Discipline Methods At Luton College

During all this time I still held on to my job and taught at Luton College. Discipline however was not my strong point. How to keep control of a class of 24 teenage students from various ethnic backgrounds was not an easy task. I adopted my own methods, one might say a manic method.

When I was training to be a teacher at Wolverhampton Polytechnic we were only taught one method of classroom management. This was my

course in class room management.

We were told by the classroom lecturer that he had to teach a class of craft students, and wanted to assert his authority before they got out of hand. Craft students are noted generally to be awkward to manage. He decided this would make sure he would have no problems with them later on in the course.

During the class when he was teaching technical drawing, he asked one of the students to go out to the building sight and bring to him a large plank of wood. When the student returned with the wood the lecturer took it from him and with one mighty karate chop, broke the wooden plank in two. He then proceeded to use the plank of wood as a ruler on the chalkboard just as though nothing had happened. He did not say a word to the students. The students stood back in amazement at this show of strength and took it as a warning. This was the lecturer method of saying to the class don't mess with me or you will get what this plank of wood got.

I found this story amusing and from this I was supposed to learn all about class management. With this limited knowledge I took it that you had to find your own method of discipline in the classroom so decided to have some fun.

One of the problems I initially found was enforcing the college rules. One rule was no eating of drinking food in the classrooms. How do you stop it? Sweet papers were evident, empty drink cans evident, so it went on whether they were allowed to or not. Even when they were told they still broke the rules.

I decided I would sort this problem my way. I thought if you couldn't beat them then join them. So I made it a rule that if I found them eating sweets or food in the class I would make them share them and help I would my self to their food. I proceeded to do so. It soon got around that I was taking their food. Whether this stopped the eating problem I do not know but on this one occasion the student got one over on me.

I saw at the back of the class two students messing about under the desk and their mouths were in operation. I stopped teaching and went to the back of the classroom and sure enough a lovely fat juicy Mars bar was in Chavda's hand. I had caught them red handed. I said come on you know the rules give it to me. Not without their protest I took it from him and looked forward to a big bite. As I consumed this

mouth of Mars bar the rest of the class burst in to laughter- they all knew- I didn't. I discovered pieces of white tablets mixed in with the chocolate. They had laced the Mars bar with laxative tablets and got their own back one me.

They were totally amused and from that time I had no real trouble.

On another occasion I had some trouble with Chavda again and could not stop him from causing a disturbance in the class. I must have ruffled his feathers as on this occasion he threatened to sort me out. He was and Asian about 17 years old and I must have been about 30 years old with out much experience in dealing with this type of situation. In my determination to sort this problem out I challenged him to do it in the boxing ring, thinking this would put as stop to it all. How ever the class took up this suggestion and he too went along with the idea- Yes-OK. How.

Oh dear I thought to my self-how am I going to get out of this one. I said they must go to the college Gym in the lunch hour and ask if we can use the boxing ring for half and hour. This sorted the problem out and we all got back to work. They must have been looking forward in anticipation to this fight out.

Sure enough off they went to the Gym during the break and shortly afterwards I got a telephone call from the women Gym lecturer asking me what was going on. She said they were not really allowed to do it. I seized on this and said good, please tell them that and that will get me off the hook.

They came back after break feeling let down as they were all looking forward to this boxing match. However there was no Chavda, nor was he there the next day. I was told that he had got wind of the fact that I was a welterweight boxing champion and was looking forward to sorting him out. This again landed me on my feet.

Muslims Want to Convert Me

During my time Luton College of Higher Education I taught classes with a lot of Muslims and other religions.

It was easy to speak to Muslim students about the things of God and they insisted they were right and God could not possibly have a son. From time to time I would visit their homes and meet their parents and they soon respected me.

I had gone through many trials and difficulties and

believed I should speak to these Muslims about Jesus and what he came to do.

I could talk to them about the Omnipotent God, the Omnipresence of God and Omniscience of God and they began to think I would soon become a Muslim.

I was invited to there young persons meeting on a Friday evening so I took with me a Muslim missionary who had been looking for an opening to meet the Luton Muslim community. We had a reasonable time just talking and listening.

Word got around that I was interested in the Muslim religion and the student president of the Muslim community came to se me one lunch hour for a meeting.

I fact some of the students nick named me God and had rang in to the local radio station, Chiltern Radio in January 1988 to say they had named me God. See my reply.

There must have been about 10 or so keen Muslim students together with their president and I was speaking to them as best I could about the Lord Jesus.

I suggested I pray for them and with them. They said this has never happened before and that they pray different to Christians. They said they pray on the floor so I suggested we should do the same.

One of the students in his respect for me took of his jacket and placed it on the floor for me to kneel on and as I kneeled down they all kneeled down behind me as I lead them in prayer.

I prayed to the effect after thanks giving my God and Father would open the eyes to the truth to what I had spoken to them about.

Afterwards I was informed this had never happened before they had never prayed or had a Christian pray for them.

I did not see any results from that time but they held me with respect and were always curious to me.

I had met a Muslim missionary called Paul? At the time connected with Spicer Street Independent Church in St Albans and asked him to come with me to their Friday night religious instruction classes. This we did and spoke to them about the Lord Jesus Christ. I learned the address of greeting with the Muslim and it was A Salem Ali com (Hello) and the reply was walli com Salem (Good bye).

Entrepreneurial Enterprise

Coming out of Depression

I found it a great relief to be living near I worked.

I had been living in a shared bedroom, at the Royce's home fare away from my family and in my car for over 18 months. I was good to be able to come home from work at lunchtime and return at leisure. I began to get well and be more involved in my work.

It was the year of the launch of the Astra Satellite and soon got involved in preparing training courses for satellite installation technicians.

At the same time we had difficulties with Isaac at school and eventually we had him accessed by an Educational Psychologist as he had Specific Learning Difficulties, which was called Dyslexia. The Bedfordshire County Council denied the word and would not accept Dyslexia as a reality. In the end we went to a leading Education Psychologist, Bev. Hornsby in London to assess Isaac and this did the trick and got Isaac recognised as having learning difficulties. This was sufficient to get some him help at school.

I too had always had problems in reading, writing and spelling. I could understand concepts and problem solving was no problem to me but the ability communicate with the written word was virtually impossible for me. How I got though teacher training college I do not know. I often thought they must have been hard up for students at the time. I can how ever remember the Head of Technical Studies calling me to his office saying he was worried about my written work. He arranged for me to have remedial help. I went to one of two sessions but it I found it was not helpful at all. It was so boring and they had no Idea how to help me. It was only when I became a Christian that my desire to learn more and more about the things of God and what Jesus had done that I was compelled to learn to read and understand words. This leaning had helped me write essays to gain entrance into the Technical Teacher Training School at Wolverhampton. So in reality I taught my self and then I taught myself to type. With these skills came the revolution and a disgruntled wife.

The Apple Mac Computer

When I threw myself into my work at Luton College, after coming back from Shropshire, I purchase an Apple Mac computer. It was a Mac Plus with 1 Meg of RAM, multi tasking, (only 340 KB of Ram needed for WORD 4), 45 Mbytes of Hard disk and a dot matrix 24 pin printer. It knocked spots of any other computer available at the time. It was

the best thing to me since the printing press in the 15 century. At Luton College we had installed PC’s, which were slow inelegant beast’s probably 8080 series (just before the 286) and only able to do single tasks. My Mac Plus became my friend and helper. My wife complained that I had spent the money we had set aside for her new kitchen, on my new Cyber (Pet). It was a wonderful helper to me so you might call it my cyber woman. No wonder my real wife complained.

This enabled me to write letters, memos, and technical notes and print them all straight away. I was able to communicate with the educational and business world. My ideas of developing a training school for Satellite Television was only able to work because of the use of the Apple Mac computer and printer. It freed me to communicate my ideas with the written word in a simple and uncomplicated way. I am sure I am dyslexic but I have never had a statement. We discovered later that my wife and Esther and David were all diagnosed as Dyslexic and were given statements. Dyslexia is really regardless of what the authorities say s. David still receives help with his learning difficulties. He has exactly the same problem as I did.

My wife later received an educational award due to her Dyslexia when she started her degree course. She bought an Apple Mac PowerBook 170, which was beautiful and I would have loved it. This computer was portable and this enabled her to do all her written work, which other wise she would not be able to do. She graduated 3 years later with and upper Second in her Degree in Cultural Studies at Portsmouth University.

As you can see I am an Apple Mac fan and not a PC fanatic.

Entrepreneurial Satellite Television

Soon how ever I had a run in with the management at Luton College. I had what I thought a good idea to make money for the college. At that time the Astra Satellite was about to be launched and Alan Sugar had announced he had intended manufacturing 3 Million satellite receivers that coming year all of which would have to be installed. I had been to a conference in London and met a satellite installation technician called Steve Holmes and I talked with him working with me at Luton College teaching about satellite systems. I wrote to the CAI (Confederation of Aerial

Industries) suggesting the Educational Standards and Industrial technology come together in a joint venture to train satellite installation technicians and award a City and Guilds, or similar award from the start. At that time very few people had installed a satellite dish or receiver.

I spoke to my immediate boss, Derrick Curran but my idea did not register or he did not see that my idea was any good. I was not prepared to be put off so in the summer holiday of that year I asked to see the Director of our College a Dr Wood. I then explained my idea saying that our Centre for Applied Technology and Innovation (CATI) at Putteridgbury was in ideal venue to set up a training school to train technicians how to install satellite TV systems. I put it to the management that we together with the CAI, City & Guilds and the industry could earn money by charging reasonable fees for students. He thought it a good idea. I explained I was due to go to a meeting with the CAI in London in the next few days and he said he would direct my Head of School, Derrick Curran to go with me. I had recorded our meeting with my portable tape recorder so it was clear to me I had the backing of the Director of the College.

The meeting went well, Derrick was late but the CIA was sufficiently impressed with my idea of education and industry coming together to ensure quality and set standards. I invited them to come to Luton to discuss these things further. My head of school was sufficiently impressed to give me the go ahead and make all necessary arrangements.

I was able to contact many people in industry, inviting them to our meeting at Cati Luton. The purpose of the meeting was to show the technical facilities of the Engineering Faculty, to the CAI and other interested parties, so that a joint venture may be pursued with those concerned. Also to show the Cati conference rooms so that marketing and educational directors may consider using our centre for future operations.

Assuming a favourable outcome we shall form a working party of technical personnel to determine future course needs and make the appropriate arrangements to start training immediately.

The Satellite Televison Venture



The Meeting on 7th September 1988 David centre by the Satellite dish

The following were in attendance at the meeting And many more.

CAI	Mr John Knight	CIA Executive
Sky Channel	Mike Aarons	Network Manager
City and Guilds	Mr Snell	Executive Representative
SAT TEL	Richard Stallworthy	Managing Director
Master Care	Jeff Belington	Commercial Director
Solara UK	John Breed,	Satellite Production Manager
Saturn Com	Andrew Demetrious	Managing Director
BSB	Bert Hurlock David Blackshaw David Ayres Keith Payne	Project Manager
Granada TV	Roy Ward	Technical Services Manager
SES ASTRA	Pam Taylor	Manager
Open University	Prof. H Gower	Assistant Vice Chancellor

Premier	John Martin Mike Tonnes Ian Welders	
Amstrad	Alan Sugar	Managing Director
Grundig	Tom Carney	Managing Director
Racal	Bert Ferguson	Managing Director
Micro X	Chris Lack	Sales Director
Matthew Aerials	Steve Holmes	Director of Satellite Installations and LCHE Advisor
Mega sat		Managing Director
MSC Industrial	Mrs L Kelly	Administrator

Most of these people came to the meeting except Alan Sugar. I thought he might have arrived in his helicopter.

I even thought of inviting Arthur C Clarke but he would have had to travel from Sri Lanka.

I gave the address to this meeting, sharing the plan and ideas. I was introduced by our Vice Principle, (who himself was called Dr Clarke), as the Director of Satellite Communications - an impressive title, which suited me down to the ground.

The meeting went down well and things looked extremely good.

It was after this meeting that the problems began as a certain woman called Fiona Howorth took on the management of the training venture. She could not be depended upon as she changed her mind and ideas without any reference to me. She was the manager of a department within Luton College of Higher Education, - the Centre for Applied Technology and Innovation called Cati. She generally cut across what I had arranged and I felt extremely frustrated with working or trying to work with her. I had thus far single-handed got the venture off the ground from nothing. I had got all the interested industries together and I was set to go. However this was not to be. The management wanted to take control, away from me.

A Problem

After several confrontations with Fiona Howorth and the management they decided to reduce my powers and make myself just responsible for the equipping of the workshop area and writing a textbook. I was told not to contact any outside organisations. They had decided to take over this venture as they planned to charge £100 per head per student. The CAI had indicated they might have 2000 persons wishing to be trained. I remembered how it was the women at the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church, which had been the problem there, and here now, was another woman taking charge of my venture and I resented it.

I was angry at their decision because I knew they could not make things work, the way things were at College. They needed entrepreneurial skills and management to deal with industry. They did not have what it took to make it work. It was then that I wrote to the Director saying I had sacked Fiona Howorth and Derrick Curran and would sort things out my way. I had worked so hard to secure many thousands of pounds worth of sponsored equipment and had the

support of the industry. It seemed a shame for me to stand by and see it fail, due to middle management incompetence.

I believed I had, at the time, the Directors backing for what I was doing and thought if he knew what was going on amongst the middle management he would not approve of them. I believed once he found out what was going on a few heads would role. I had the original audio recording of our first meeting when he gave me the permissions to do what I must to achieve our objectives, so I informed the management that I had this recording, which actually gave my commission to do what I was doing, and that I had the Directors approval.

My state of mind and manic activity

At this time I was feeling very happy and had many fluent ideas and was able to talk about them, virtually none stop. My senses were heightened and I appreciated colours, beauty and music. My libido was high and on one occasion, when rushing to London on the train, I was virtually stopped in my tracks to admire the beauty of a woman traveller.

A Take Over and I am Paid to Resign

The management at Luton College wondered what had happened to me and they no longer listened to me. They had decided they did not want me working for them and wanted to take over the work I had begun. The College management asked the NATFHE union to be involved but I was not a member so this was a difficulty for them because they did not want to deal with me directly. As a result I was suspended from work and the management asked the Chairman of the Union, Mr Tom May, to act for me and with them. He acted in the interest of the Union and he informed me it was in the interest of the union to do so. It was in the Colleges interest to pay me £6000 in lieu of notice, to leave my lecturing post. I did not really wish to leave but rather than risk being unfairly sacked I agreed to take the money and leave, provided I could have a good reference. I realised the Management could not handle the situation and it was in my best interest to leave. This was early 1988.

I was told by the Director to destroy the tape recording of our original meeting, which contained the proof that I had his approval for the venture that had I developed.

Bipolar Disorder or Manic Depression

During this time, in fact the week I was suspended from work, I went to see my doctor and was signed off sick due to not being able to sleep and my hyper - activity when working on the satellite-training venture. It was then suggested that I had a bipolar mood disorder and was in a hypomanic state. A psychiatrist, at the Luton and Dunstable Hospital, later confirmed this diagnosis. My doctor prescribed some medication to bring me down from my high mood. This was Haloperidol, a typical antipsychotic drug, and also Priodel, with the active ingredient lithium. My mind had been filled with many ideas seeking to develop the training school for the satellite industry.

At the same time I realised that Michael, my brother, had very similar patterns of behaviour and I realised he too suffered from this kind of mood disorder except in his case he had no medical treatment. I recall speaking to his wife on the telephone. They just had separated and were going through a divorce. I related to her about my condition and that it was identical to Michael's and could be the reason for his current behaviour. I then realised he too was suffering from manic depression and this accounted for his mood swings in the past.

The effects of the medication that I had taken did not take place for a few weeks or so but when it did, it all happened on one day. I had been suspended from work due to my manic behaviour but I was not prepared to be put down, so I intended to continue my work from home. I had gained a lot of support from the satellite TV industry and secured over £30,000 worth of equipment, all for the training venture at Luton College. However being suspended from work left me high and dry, so to speak.

Having decided to go it alone, I advertised my own training program in the local newspaper and taught future satellite installers how to install satellite equipment from my home, at Graham Gardens, Luton. The man next door got a bit upset because I had 5 satellite dishes in the garden and he said it looked like a Radio Transmitting Station. We had a little write-up in the local newspaper about this training venture.

Third Bout of Depression

It was on one of these training days that this medication I had been taking took effect. I felt a wave of depression come over me, half way through the day, just like the first wave of depression I experience

on the garage roof at Mount Street in 1975. I was teaching a group of students when it hit me. This depression was to last for a further 3 years. I became so bad I had to rely on further medication. I could hardly leave the house through the agony I was facing. I was struggling with the things of God and did not know how to handle the problems that I was beginning to face. I wondered why in the providence of God this had all happened and reasoned that I had given my self over to too much work, to the neglect of the things of God. I rejected the notion that I was suffering from manic depression as I thought it was simply due to excessive work and the opposition that I had experienced at Luton College.

Symptoms of Manic Depression

or a Bipolar mood disorder

What is often recognised and described as manic behaviour is seen when a person begins to have unusual ideas that seem brilliant and they are able to talk about them, expressing their thoughts with very rapid speech. They talk 10 to the dozen so to speak.

Accompanying this is the inability to sleep for any length of time. They wake early, with fluid ideas wishing to get on with the day. They find they have more strength than usual and are very active, hence the term used about children being hyperactive. They can go from one job or activity to another leaving neither finished. They will find no job too great and are prepared to take on enormous tasks.

When in the manic phase, or hypo state, a person can become very short tempered and impatient with others, as they wish others would keep up with them. At one time my wife sought to control me and she refused to stop 'having a go' at me. In response I held her up against the wall with my hands around her neck seeking to stop her from going on at me. I stopped when she slid down to the floor, as she could no longer breath.

Such people are impatient in conversation; often not allowing another to complete their sentences, as they wish to answer any objection or another persons idea before they have expressed it, as they think they know best. They believe themselves to be right and often argue their case till others either reject them or accept them.

There is an increase in libido, along with an increase in the body senses. Sight seems to be clearer, both natural and insight. The ability to appreciate art,

music, poetry and spirituality, increases. There can be a desire to dance and sing and a delusion they are great singers and/or performers. It is as though the human senses touch, taste smell, hearing and sight are synchronized, enabling rapid communication between that person and the outside world that allows them to sympathise or react to historic events.

In short they feel on top of the world as if nothing could go wrong and they may well believe the world was made just for them.

In my case I experience all of these things along with the belief that I have a personal relationship with God, that Jesus Christ was my Saviour, and that all things, the good and the bad, would work together for my good.

However It is the low side that generally leads the suffer to seek help. In my previous lows I felt God had forsaken me and that I had become a castaway because of some negligence or sin in the past. Such fears and thoughts are unbearable and are really destructive. Once in that state there seems to be no way out, just as though one has been thrown down a pit hundreds of feet deep. There is no way out. I knew that William Cowper, of the C18, the famous hymn writer who wrote hymns such as, “There is a fountain filled with blood” and “God moves in a mysterious way”, suffered from melancholy which left him in total despair. I could fully enter into and feel the sense of his poetry and hymns. He suffered from manic depression.

I have since learned that many well known people suffer from Manic Depression.

List of people with bipolar disorders:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_people_with_bipolar_disorder

Frank Bruno,
Russell Brand,
Kurt Cobain,
Ray Davies,
Stephen Fry
Paul Gascoigne,
Spike Milligan
Florence Nightingale,
Jean-Claude Van Damme,
Vincent Van Gogh,
Ruby Wax,
Catherine Zeta-Jones
All such experiences and more are to be related as

my story unfolds and I hope they will be of help to any reader who has the same experiences or knows some one who may be suffering from manic depression.

33 We Move to Fareham

And so I have been paid to leave which prompted to look for a lecturing Job elsewhere and Fareham College had advertised and I applied successfully. and thankfully I was offered the post. I took up the position in September 1988 and I believed this was God’s provision.

Fareham College



Fareham College Bishops Field Road

The Principal at that time was Mr John MacNab and the Vice Principal was Derek Feber, with Pam Robertson as the Bursar. I discovered later that Derek Feber was a Christian and helped with the Christian Union at the College.

It was a very fair interview and I believe the College selection process was very good in that it was truly an “Open Opportunities College”. My record from Luton College was either acknowledged to be good or ignored or kept secret. Mike Pease, Head of Division, and Geoff Whitefield, Principal Lecturer, selected me for the post at Fareham College, on the strength of my own presentation.

A record was later made in my personal file of my former stay in Borstal, and conviction of possessing a firearm without a license at the age of 18 years.

I was very please to get the job but this meant another move and involved the difficulty in selling our house. I had to move into lodgings in Fareham. This was another Snailbeach situation, living in lodgings and travelling home at weekends. I missed being a father to my kids and living in my own home. This lasted for a further 18 months until we finally sold our house in Graham Gardens. During this time

I was under a cloud of depression even though it was controlled through Lithium (Priodel). I was also, on reflection, experiencing the other symptoms, which accompany manic or bipolar depression.

Before I left to work at Fareham College, we were walking one day in the countryside on the Dunstable Down, and I saw for the first time in years, an erotic magazine that had been left by the wayside. My normal practice would be to turn away and not look at such a magazine but on this occasion I was tempted to look. The effect of these pictures were so great that I could not get them out of my mind and they followed me and were retained as erotic images for years to come. I did not resist this temptation and proved to be my downfall at a later date.

My wife had decided she would like to return to full time education and she took up the offer of a place on a degree course in Cultural Studies, at Portsmouth University. She had previously studied on an Access Course at Barnfield College in Luton, when I was working at Fareham.

It took us 18 months to sell our house in Luton during which time we were living apart as a family yet again. I felt alone and still suffering from depression even with the medication.

We were eventually able to sell our house in Luton just before my wife began her first year on the degree course at Portsmouth University. We were able then to move into rented accommodation at 8 Queens Grove, Southsea and the children went to St. Jude’s junior school, in old Portsmouth.

My Doubts About God

At this time I began to shut my ear to the Word of God and I allowed temptation to enter my thoughts. We been attending St. Judes Church in Southsea and I felt that I was as Steven Royce had called me, like Mephibosheth - crippled and living in Lo debar. Mephibosheth was a crippled and had been driven out from his rightful place in his father’s kingdom (King Saul) and was living in a place called Lo-debar, a place of dry land and no pastures.

I began to entertain various sinful thoughts and then actions. I found greater arguments and reasons to explain away Gods dealings with me in the past. It could not be denied I had really believed in God and experienced many remarkably deliverances and provisions from God, but now the subtlety was in the form of such thoughts as these:

“How do I know that it is God working and not just the product of misguided interpretation of events? I.e.. Yes, you believed God worked for you and yes your life had been radically change by that belief or faith but surely all you believed could have been just not true - granted it would have effected your life just as it effects other peoples - but believing in something does not actually make it true. You have believed in something just like others and what you believed is not true”. That was the argument and I began to accept it. (Reader - this is a lie from Satan, don’t you believe it also).

Reader, as you read this I want you to know that as Peter was astonished and all that were with him at the draught of fishes that they had caught when they fished at Jesus’ command, I believe I have written this account at the command of Jesus, and we too will be astonished at the many fishes caught through this testimony of the loving kindness and faithfulness of God to me.

Although I did fall away from God I now recall what Jesus had said to me on the night of my salvation on the 16th January 1970. Jesus said, “David I will never leave you”. And so it will become clear that He does restore and seek the lost and the prodigal sons.

Soon we were attending Titchfield church, but I still felt like the cripple in the New Testament lying beside the water pool at Bethesda. I wanted to be healed but had no one to put me in the pool. I took my family to church but it was more out of routine than any thing else and I was in a barren spiritual state.

I had needs but was turning from God at Titchfield church. Then I met my wife to be.

Moving to Fareham I Turn From God

Once we moved to Fareham I continued to listen to the arguments put forward by my wife when she was studying for her University Degree at Portsmouth University. This was a degree in Cultural Studies. She shared with me the current views from sociology, psychology and philosophy about the none - existence of God. The whole of such higher education worked from the presupposition, “God does not exist”. This really was what they now called Post Modernism.

I heard about the philosophers such as Kant, Hegel, and Kierkegaard and learned about Existentialism. In essence I got the picture that were no absolutes at all. No God. No rights or wrongs. Nothing. Morality was changeable, and depending upon society. This suited

me and helped me to turn my back on the Word of God. In this temptation I did not do as Job, a character in the Bible. I sinned and turned from God. This was my foolishness.

My Wife Questions The Reality Of God

My wife also began to question the reality of God and turn from the ways she once believed true. She entertained different thoughts and we both got involved in things, which were not of God.

I now believe that my sinful heart wanted to be free from God’s rule so that I could be independent and do as I pleased. I think I must have thought, “ If this is what is now believed by the highly educated and the philosophers of the day, then I am a perfect student of this new age so I will put it into practice” - and that is what I did. (I now deplore it - it is not education, but a lie). I took these views on board and began to argue the none - existence of God, being intent now to do my own things.

I argued since God does not exist there is no absolute right or wrong. All is relative. I in fact decided what was right or wrong for me. I actually became my own god.

I now believe God gave me up to my own sinful heart and left me to myself to practice sin. I did not know at that time what was in store for me. I was given over to indulge in sexual talk and activity outside marriage. I went off the rails and got into things I now feel ashamed to speak about. Those that knew me at that time will know all about it. I was wrong and out of order. Again, on reflection, I was displaying the many symptoms, which accompany a Bipolar mood disorder.

Michael goes to Thailand

About this time [1991/2], Michael had started his own company making movies In Thailand called “Paradise Movies” and he involved our Mum and Dad, who lived in Eastbourne, in sorting out all his finances whilst he was away. He also took Jessica, his 10-year-old daughter, with him for the summer, but cause her mum great alarm when he did not bring her back to England. He said at the time that he wanted to get back at his ex - wife because of all the grief she had given him in the past.

Michael in Thailand



Paradise Movies

Michael in his Room

In the end Michael’s business in Thailand went wrong. His equipment was stolen and he ran out of money. We don’t really know what he got into while in Thailand but Mum was so fed up with bailing him out with money and favours that she finally said she had had enough of him as he was making her ill.

Michael in Bangkok



Sailors Beware

Michael a Policeman

It was during this time that an article appeared in the News of the World, on January 19th, 1992. I learned later from Michael that this story was a complete fabrication.

NEWS OF THE WORLD, January 19th, 1992
EXCLUSIVE by MARK CHRISTY

Sailors beware! A new nautical menace has appeared on the horizon - a conman Michael Clarke has set up a scam to keep himself supplied with booze and birds on a paradise beach.

He has ripped off scores of unsuspecting British yachting folk by offering them jobs in an epic sailing movie he claims is being made in Thailand.

Clarke’s ad in Yachting Monthly magazine promises free return airfares and £40 a day for a five-day week. All he wants is a £55 insurance fee from applicants.

But there is No film and punters NEVER hear from him again.

Former Watford market trader Clarke reckons four square rigged sailing ships are going to be used in the movie ‘Invasion of Thailand’, set 200 years ago.

He calls himself Peter Timberlake and operates

his con from the “Paradise Suite” in the Thai City of Patiya.

But his “Office Suite” is a seat in one of Patiya’s hundreds of girlye bars. And his firm “Paradise Movies” Inc. Does not exist - though he does have a home movie video camera in a local pawnshop.

The slogan of “Paradise Movies” is “A cut above the rest”. And when the News of the World found Clarke he was half-cut above the rest.

An investigator confronted him at Jan’s Bar. “Yes I am Paradise Movies”, he slurred. “But I’ve been up boozing all night and need to think before I speak to you.”

Then he vanished and our man found him at The Jasmine, on Patiya’s beach, - a bar offering girls for sex. He was working for £2 per night touting for customers.

Asked if he intended to return the cash he had defrauded, he replied, “ I can’t even afford the price of a beer”.

Thai Police and Immigration officials are now looking into the fraud.

One British yachtsman who fell for the con is architect Fred Howells of Christchurch, Dorset.

He sent off his £55 after seeing Clarke’s ad in November, and even rang Thailand to check.

Mr Howells, 55, said, “someone there said they would look for him in his office, so I assumed it was genuine”

Yacht skipper Alan Stevens of East London, also wrote but smelt a rat.

“When I contacted Yachting Monthly they admitted they had lots of complaints about the advert”, said Alan, 47.

No one from Yachting Monthly was available to comment.

Michael Writes Home Seeking Help

Needless to say Michael got himself into trouble and wrote home to our Mum and Dad for help. This is Michael’s letter home that he sent shortly after this news article.

Punnee Bar Babbua Muang, Kanchanaburi Thailand 7100

Dear Mum and Dad,
10/06/92

How are you both? Keeping well I hope. It will be good weather in England so you will be able to enjoy your garden. It’s been four months since your last letter,

which you sent to Peunnee Bar in Kanchanaburi. That was the only letter I ever received from there. I did reply to that letter but everyone seems to be having problems with mail to and from England.

Last time I wrote I was working for a tracking company but after I set them up with two main agents they double-crossed me. Things here are getting from bad to worse. Six weeks ago I lost all my money £700. I was in my room on a raft house. A big storm came, which caused a lot of damage, a lot of my belongings went to the bottom of the lake 100 meters deep, together with my money and Passport. I reported it to the police and got a report to give to the Embassy in Bangkok. I wrote to the Embassy in Bangkok but so far no answer. In my letter I told them I had a photocopy of my passport and lost my money. I am in Thailand with no money and my visa is out of date about £400. I also told them I had no one in England to help me financially. The tourist police told me not to worry, as it was an accident, which should stop me from going to prison. Now I don’t know what to do. At the moment I am living with a Thai family 80 Km east of Kanchanaburi at Sisawats Great Lake. They have several bamboos raft houses designed for tourists but they are in very bad repair so I am helping them to repair them so at least I get food and keep (but no wages). If we get tourists I will get some money but at the moment it is low season and the many political problems in Bangkok is not helping. If I don’t hear from the Embassy soon I will have to try to go to Bangkok to see them.

I know that over the past few years I have been stupid. I have lost every penny, even my daughter, and my credibility. I am stuck in Thailand penny less. Even if I could get home where would live and what would I do? I am not well and I am not young and most of all I have no spirit to live. Even when I had money I wasn’t happy. I know I had a reasonable job and a nice flat but I was so screwed up inside it was sending me crazy. Even when Jessica came to see me it was heart breaking for me when she went home. I know you both love Jessica very much and because of me you cannot see her, I wrote to her a couple of times but no answer.

Please Mum and Dad give me a few words of wisdom as I think that this depression could be the end of me. I thought of writing to Brendan Gibson in Australia but I don’t know his address. May be he

could help me with some money and I could work to pay him back.

All my TV and video equipment you sent I lost due to massive tax duty and also a crook that tricked me.

The weather here is hot every day. It seems the same, just like England’s heat waves when you get them, but the water in the lake is clear and fresh and night air is refreshing. Every one I speak too says the tourist trade in Thailand is finished.

Please write to me soon and let me know how every one is. Even a quick word to Jessica to say I love her would be good for me. Please when you write don’t give me a lecture on how irresponsible I have been and on how much you have helped me. I know all this and am truly sorry. My marriage break-up I think was the cause of it but I don’t know.

I expect my financial situation is very bad at home and Margaret and Chris think I am very bad. Please what can I do now?

Well today is another day and I have just heard from the British Embassy. They tell me that they have no financial resources to help me even though I lost my money and passport. They say I must have money sent from England to clear my over - stay, about £400 otherwise I will be in prison without a doubt. So now it’s making me ill and this Thai family cannot help me much longer. I have written to a few people in Thailand to see if they can help me with a job but I don’t hold much hope.

I have heard that in Bangkok I could possibly get a job teaching English but I would have to go to Bangkok to check it out. At least if I could get my visa in order and it would keep me straight with immigration and stop me going to prison. The Embassy pointed out any money should come through Thomas Cook Travel Agents and send it to their head office in Siloam Road, Bangkok and would only take 24 hours or so and on proof of I.D. I could draw it. But I would have to know when to go to Bangkok, which would mean a telegram here first to let me know from you. I know you think I have a damn cheek after all you have done for me over the years but I have no one else to turn to. I have written to David and Irene for help and advice.

I really am going crazy with the thought of going to a Thai Prison.

If you cannot help I will understand as I feel that you have done too much for me in the past and I should be old enough to take care of my self, but this

is Thailand in the 3rd World.

I have just had a thought ----- for me to get to Australia. I need a return ticket out to get an entry visa and this I doubt if Brendan would do anyway but please try and locate his address for me.

Please send my letter on to David, as I do not know his new address.

Write soon and take care.

Your loving son Michael.

PS. I have written to the Embassy again asking what will happen if I give myself up. I think they will hand me over to immigration to lock me up. Then the Embassy will inform you that I am in Prison but I don’t know.

Mum and Dad fed up with Michael

Mum and dad were fed up with what they thought were Michael’s irresponsible ways and they despaired of him. I think mum in the end sent him the money to get him out and back to England.

On a letter received from Michael Mum wrote “turning point” so I assume she felt Michael was changing his ways.

Turning Point

Mum writes turning point on the top of a letter dated 10th July 1992, sent by Michael from Sam’s Place, Song Kwan Rd, Kanchanabari.

Michael writes, “Last week I went to Bangkok to speak with the embassy but they told me no help can be given what so ever and the only way is to get some money from home to clear my visa overstay and an air ticket home. They said they would get their office in London to contact you. I have also written to Auntie Edith.

The straight facts are as follows: I have been on overstay since February 16th which is 100B fine a day= £350 to date. And to clear it I must have the money to go to the immigration plus an air ticket home £300. If not I will go to prison and work off my fine for £2 per day. Then I have to pay for the air ticket and deportation costs, which doesn’t get me anywhere. They will keep me in prison indefinitely until money comes. Every day I stay here is about another £2.40.

I am ill with worry. I do not have any thing left here or in England, only my family who have helped me time and time again. I have been so foolish over my life. I have no will power to go on living. I cannot face the future. I know I must find a way to get back

to England. David said I could live with him for a while which could be good as I could not face living in Eastbourne. I would have to start where nobody knows me, as I can’t handle being with people who know what’s happened to me since I have been in Thailand.

Why did the Embassy tell you I was fit and well? How do they know how much I am suffering inside myself? At the moment I am living at the above address. My clothes I keep in a hold- all and I keep it in the toilet of a boat where I sleep on deck at night. I get food free but that’s all.

Please, please help me, as I know the Embassy cannot. Please give me a ring with a word of encouragement. The best time is at 11 am your time. Just ask for Michael. PS. I have written to every one I know for help but no joy.

All my love Michael xxx.

Michael Returns From Thailand

I was at this time, June 1993, that my brother Michael returned from Thailand and he did not look well at all, and on reflection he was suffering from depression but said nothing to me. He had nowhere to live, or money. So he came to live with me at our home in Fareham. He was quite content to live in our caravan, in our front garden and stayed with us until he was able to decide his way forward. He met Silver Girl and was aware of the developing relationship but said nothing. It was after this that he made the decision to return to our parent’s home, in Eastbourne and it was there he earned money by buying and selling cars.

Highlands Road and the BMX Bike Frame

My mood was very high at this time and one day Isaac came home from school very upset because some lad up Highlands Road had tucked him up for £13.00. Apparently he had offered him a BMX bike frame for £13.00, as he wanted money that we later found out was to buy 1/8th ounce of Hash. Isaac gave him the money in exchange for the BMX frame but the lad would not give him the frame. I felt very angry and realized what I must do. I was dressed in an overall and said to Isaac come with me and we will find this person. I drove my motorbike with Isaac on the back and we toured the Highlands estate asking for the where about of this boy.

Isaac on his BMX Bike



Isaac flat Land

We were directed to a house where he lived and I marched up to the front door and knocked him up. When he opened the door Isaac confirmed it was him so I, without hesitation, marched into his house, not caring who else might be there and simply demanded “WHERE IS IT”, meaning the frame or the money. The boy must have been about 16 years old and said he had neither. To which I replied, “Right go and get me something worth money”, and he asked why and said is it for security”, to which I replied, “Yes”. He bought from upstairs a stereo system and a quick look found it poor quality so I said that is not good enough go and get a better one. When he returned with a better one I informed him he could collect the stereo when he paid back the £13.00. Then we drove off.

Motor Bike Burnt Out

The next day when I retuned from work I was informed that the next door neighbour’s motor bike had been set light too and I then realized that this was done in retaliation for me taking the stereo system in payment for the £13.00 taken from Isaac. I was thankful that the bike next door was insured against such crime. That how ever wasn’t the end of the matter as word had got around that they had hit the wrong bike and the next day my bike was taken and found burned out in the park, down the road to Appleton Road. I thought that’s OK as I was insured too but I later discovered, to my disappointment, that I had to pay the first £150.00 on any insurance claim.

I only paid £150.00 for the bike so I lost out and the Highland Road lads got one over on me. (I wonder who they are?)

34 A Dramatic Change in my Life (The Fall)

It was during the time that Michael was in Thailand, that I began to come out of depression (a sever manic low) and was now beginning to climb higher.

My wife had begun her degree course and I felt she began to look down upon those who was not as educated as she was. Also I felt that she no longer respected me, as I was not an Art student graduate, just a mere low-level engineer. I had listened to the Post modernist arguments regarding morality and religion and became a perfect student as I began to deny the existence of God and to entertain the idea of an open marriage.

Meeting Silver Girl

For the sake of anonymity I refer to this lady as “Silver Girl”, due to the addiction I experienced through meeting her I later called her nurse Ratchet, depending on my mood I was in. Nurse Ratchet is a character in the film, “One Flew over a Cock Cuckoo’s Nest”, starring Jack Nicholson. Nurse Ratchet was a psychiatric nurse and it so happened I fell in love with a psychiatric nurse.

Nurse Ratchet



Silver Girl

The name “Silver Girl” is taken from the line of the song “Bridge over troubled Waters”, by Simon and Garfunkel. In this song they make mention of Sliver Girl, which is of course the heroine needle that the addict depends upon.

One Sunday morning, in 1992, whilst my family and I were attending the Titchfield Evangelical Church, we met a lady in the car park, behind the doctors’ surgery. She was blond and had four children with her. She was going to the same church that we

were going to.

I soon discovered she was not the mother of all these children. She only had two children and she was separated from her husband. My wife and I befriended her and we became good friends.

I had not long come out of depression and I notice my mood getting higher. I began to feel very happy. I began to be interested in my wife’s studies at university and we began to do interesting things. Silver Girl became my wife’s very close friend and at that time I was very happy and on reflection was rising out of depression into a manic high.

We met interesting people, Dr Geoff Parsons, a doctor in psychology and moderator of the local Macintosh user group in Southampton, who specialised in people’s sexual problems. We met another Mac user, Richard Block, the former of B&Q; he was the original Block & Quail. My wife at that time had a crush on him but he was interested in health foods and alternative medicine. During this time I began to fall in love with Silver Girl.

Making Music

During this time my memories of former pop music came to the front and I recalled songs by the Everly Brothers and Billy Fury. I was so taken with these old songs that I ask one of my students, Jim Berry, who was a keyboard player in a local group and a former member of The Yarbirds, to compose a backing track to “Halfway to Paradise”, by Billy Fury. This was before karaoke was well known and I took this track and played it at Silver Girl’s party, singing the words, which were for her.

Falling in love

It wasn’t long before I felt Silver Girl would full-fill my every dream. I knew this was wrong but with my newfound philosophy that I had learned from my wife’s Cultural Studies at Portsmouth University I ignored my conscience and felt no one could say it was wrong. So because I wanted this relationship with Silver Girl, I denied the truth of God, in order to get what I wanted.

Leaving My Wife and Children

Thinking totally of my self- I can’t blame anyone else - and after my wife had discovered that I had a relationship with Silver Girl, I left her and moved out of my house, taking all the things I needed with me. I took our caravan and joined the Abshott Country

Club, parking the caravan in their camping park. I was hoping all would be easy, that the dust would settle and things would turn out well. This was not to be the case because although I could see Silver Girl I felt so very guilty and this spoiled our times together as I tried to suppress my guilt.

My wife, with her newfound education and philosophy, had opened her mind to new ideas and she too had her own doubts about God. She had entertained the idea of another partner at one time and leaving me. However things had turned. I wanted to marry the girl I loved. But things were far from easy. I began to reason there was no God, no condemnation and so I could do as I pleased and I was going to get my woman at all costs.

“But the thing that David had done displeased the Lord”. 11 Samuel 11 verses 27.

This is a quotation from the bible, which relates the story of David, the king, who committed adultery with Bathsheba and she became pregnant. The story tells how David arranged to have her husband killed, so he could marry her and cover up his sin. This happened - her husband was killed and David married Bathsheba but the baby died. They did however have another child who became the ancestor of Jesus Christ.

In my case things did fail. I had left my wife and got my girl but we were both very miserable and insecure with each other. Silver Girl realized she could not cope with the situation, as things stood. I became depressed and at the end of myself and had nowhere to turn for help. I was desperate alone in my caravan not being able to see a good future.

In this condition I knew I needed God but I did not believe in God. I knew I had wronged my wife, children and many others, in the process. I would have invented God, if I could, for I believed that only God could help us in our situation. It was impossible. I just needed to cry out for help, to someone or being, to deliver me from my utter despair.

A Prodigal Son

I knew that I could not pray to God (the God whom I remembered and knew from the scriptures) in my present state because of a truth, which had remained with me. It is written, God will not hear the prayer of the wicked. I knew that whilst I was not prepared to give up my sin, I could not pray since God would not hear my prayers – i.e. If I regarded that iniquity in my heart.

At that time when I was living in my caravan at Abshott Country Club, I remember reasoning how I might turn back to God in prayer. I shared my thoughts with Silver Girl and we both decided we had to give up our relationship because it was wrong and I ought to offer to go back to my wife.

At that time I met a friend, from the Lock Heath Free Church, and he made an appointment to see me, in order to talk through my dilemma and difficulties. He was a great help and support and encouraged me to seek God. Both he and his wife had been through divorce and difficulties and were able to appreciate all the heartache and pain that was associated with divorce and separation.

If it were not for the mercy of God I would have been totally lost and in an awful state of mind. I may have ended my life, as things were so bad. I had nowhere else to turn and I needed God more than ever before. I bless the Lord for He heard my cry.

It was then that the simple words of Jesus that helped me and washed my mind of the lies I had believed. Faith came to me by hearing the Word of God.

On reflection I now know God had called me back to Himself, as He was not going to let me go. As Jesus had once said to me he would never leave me. I left him but he came after me using life’s difficulties to drive me home.

I spoke to my wife about the situation and informed her I would return to her if she wanted but thankfully she informed me she had found a partner and wanted to divorce me. This was in February 1993.

I Was Made To Walk The Plank

When I was told that my wife was going to divorce me I was thankful because I now felt I could return to be with Silver Girl without my conscience accusing me that I must return to my wife. I was shocked and taken back when I broke the good news to Silver Girl as I thought she too would be happy. This was not the case! She felt that I had only returned because my wife had rejected me, that I had wanted to return to her. Silver Girl maintained that this made her feel second best. I was speechless because it had been muted before that she could not feel secure with me as I had already left a wife and what would prevent me doing the same to her? She had reasoned that if I had the capacity to leave a wife and children, without a conscience than I would be a cold and callous

126

individual.

35 Number 2 Hayling Close

A Period Between Two Wives

In the early part of 1993 to 94 I decided I should find more suitable accommodation rather than live in the caravan throughout the winter. Silver Girl had her own house, living with her two children and we believed we should wait until we were married before we lived together. From this time our relationship was so unstable and insecure it was touch and go if we would ever make it together. It was awful for me as every time we argued Silver Girl would say she would move to Canada or France if ever she thought I did not want her or if we split up.

Anyway, I enquired about a room, which had become available in Hayling Close, in Fareham, It was here that I met Simon Noel and his cat “Baldric” who only had three legs. Simon also rented a room at number 2 and David Jennings was our landlord.

There was a rear garden that had overgrown with an ironing board in the middle and a tin foil food take away tray, formed into a do -it -yourself barbecue sitting on the board. I thought the garden was a mess, ideal how ever for a cat. This became my home for the next 3 years while I waited my release by divorce, which took place in August 1996.

It was here that I began to contend with my bipolar or manic mood swings. As the disputes, arguments and insecurities that I experience with Nurse Ratchet, plunged me now into those chasms of deep depression. However my creative mind, on a high, devised ideas to sustain the highs, to prevent my depressions. At one time during these depressed periods I had contemplated suicide, using my brothers shot gun, but I kept these things secret and told no one but a Samaritan Counsellor in Portsmouth. I fought the lows of depression by creating artificial highs, as will be seen by the things that I got up too during this period.

I Wanted More Room

After living in one room for a few weeks and sharing the downstairs lounge with Simon, I noticed the small bedroom was not in use and was filled with Simon’s gear, so I asked the landlord if I could rent this room as well as the room I had. I wanted my kids to come and stay with me, from time to time. They were Isaac (14), Esther (13), Eleanor (11), and David

127

Chapter 35

NUMBER 2 HAYLING CLOSE

Chapter 35

(11), who all lived with their mother and they were students at Henry Cort School. I don’t think Simon was please with this arrangement because that was Baldric’s bedroom, and Simon also wanted it as a free office. Simon was a bit like his cat and was territorial as he placed one or two of his things everywhere, including the garage, just to say he lived there too.

Harrods of Abshott

I had far more time on my hands, than a married man would have had, and at that time I discovered “Harrod’s of Abshott”, the most salubrious shopping centre in Hampshire.

I soon learned there were other branches in Southampton, Gosport and Port Solent. There were many bargains to be found at Harrod’s that I could not really refuse to buy. There were televisions, computers, washing machines, weighing machines, tools, equipment, furniture and clothing and they were generally all at rock bottom prices. “Harrod’s” was in fact the local amenity tip – the dump. Now run by Shaun of Hopkins Recycling Company of Botley, Hampshire.

Shopping For Other People

I often found my self-shopping with other people in mind, which meant that when I saw items of value that I did not really need I would buy the valuable article for someone I had in mind. I asked Simon if I could just put a few things in the garage and use it as a store. Not that it was Simon’s garage but because he was the older, long-standing tenant, and he had taken over the garage for himself.

After a few weeks he began to moan about my televisions and other things being stored in the garage. I think he felt I was taking over the house. (Which I was).

The Television License

It was shortly after that we had a blazing row over his TV Licence and then he wanted my things out of the garage. His problem was that he had paid for a television license for his room, and not for the benefit of whole house. He did this because in the past the other tenants did not wish to club together and buy one license, for the whole house, so he had bought his own and informed the licensing authority that the other tenants needed to buy their own as he was not prepared to pay for others to watch TV at his expense. This was Simon’s way to ensure that no one else at the

126

Chapter 35

NUMBER 2 HAYLING CLOSE

Chapter 35

house could benefit from the license he had bought.

Now Simon had not told me about this history however things began to fall into place because a week previously he had slipped a note under my bedroom door, which was from the TV licensing authority wanting me to buy a license.

You see I never watched the TV but he did. He was unemployed and watched his TV all alone in his own room but had been caught watching it without a licence and was required to renew his license and possibly face a fine

His drift was this; if I were to contribute half the money to renew his license then I could watch the TV set in the lounge because his licence would cover that as well. This sounded very reasonable at first but I felt there was something more to the scheme than Simon had let on, so I said no. This niggled Simon.

What niggled Simon was the fact that I repaired TV’s and videos in the lounge, and I had also started storing them in the garage. Simon did not like it because he began to think the Licensing Authority did not trouble the house to inspect for licenses simply because he had paid for one already. In effect he thought I was benefiting from him having a licence - I should pay.

He had the garage and because I refused to buy a TV licence he was not very cooperative with me and did not want me storing TV’s and other things, in the (his?)

I Had Moved In And Simon Knew It

I had moved in and he knew it and he felt if I had a TV or repaired them in the house then I would have to buy a licence. So Simon did have a point.

However as far as I was concerned I only collected TV’s from the dump and repaired them with other people in mind. I did not need a TV even though most people did. I suppose I felt that the TV license was a good earner. For me and my argument went like this; I repaired televisions for other people to watch and so they would have to buy their own license and of course the government would be helped financial by my service. So really I felt I should be exempt from a licence. This was my drift and I still think there is some mileage in my argument.

Simon was not happy and I am sure he thought I was most unreasonable but he never thought to discuss it with me he just went off “Half cocked.” One evening it happened - as I repaired a TV set in

127

the lounge that evening he became very angry. He came at me in a frenzy and threatening to hit me with a chair, as he smashed it across the table. He was a well-built man and about 6 feet tall and he could have flattened, me if he had hit me, but I stood my ground and he scurried off back to his room.

I Take Over The House at Hayling Close

It was soon after this that Simon left because he had had enough of me and he took the other tenants with him, leaving the house empty. It was now that the landlord offered me the whole house for £400 per month and gave me permission to rent out the other rooms. This was unfortunate for the neighbours, who did not share my interests. I took over the house and my habits continued. Shopping at Harrod’s continued. The more people I knew the more items I found to buy and so I soon filled the garage with wonderful items of value.

I Take in lodgers

My first tenant was a Mr Alan McCarthy, a window cleaner who had come from Manchester, although he had lived in Fareham for some time. I said he could have a room for £40 per week. I hadn’t realised, but he had been living in a motor vehicle ambulance in a garage, somewhere near Segensworth throughout that winter, and had severe problems due to possible drug abuse and his broken marriage. I discovered he was a baptised member of the Mormon Church but was not actually practising. I think he appreciated the fact that I took him, in without references. He had a few pounds, but that was all.

For Alan things were not easy and I am sure he felt a bit like Jonah (a character from the Bible) as things started to go wrong for him the moment he moved in with me. In straightening out his room he attempted to nail down the floorboards only to find he put a nail through the central heating water pipe that Sunday evening and water was running everywhere. Alan felt he was to blame and found it difficult to cope with. Nevertheless I soon fixed this, to his relief.

My next tenant was Sean Land (some say Private Land). He was a friend of Alan and had been living in his Ford Fiesta during the winter nights too. I think Sean also had problems with drug misuse, a broken relationship and was not able to see his daughter. Sean had a more personal problem- his music and his feet. His music was too loud and his feet smelt.

It was their music, which caused the neighbours to complain to the council. We were served with noise monitoring forms and threatened with confiscation of equipment if the noise level was not kept down. It was difficult to convince these lads of the amount of noise they were making.

The next inmate was Mark, another acquaintance of Alan and Sean. Occasionally Mark’s girlfriends stayed the night.

Joe Neve was the next to take up residence; he loved cars and was in an out of trouble with the police all the time.

It was from Joe that I obtained my lovely Fiesta, a 1.4 cc engine, in nice condition, for £40. This car took the place of my car (TAN 707Y), which I bought, from a Motor Vehicle lecturer at Fareham College.

My Best Car



David’s Fiesta

One of the best cars I had (Cheers Joe)

A Run in with the Police

The problem with older cars is that they tend to go wrong but a Fiesta can be easily fixed. One evening, coming back from Gosport my exhaust pipe was blowing and I got pulled over by the police on a routine spot check. I was given a “Producer”, which is a note to get the car fixed within 7 days. On my way home however, I had to pick up my daughter, Esther, from the Locks Heath Free Church, and in the dark I realised my indicators had stopped working when I was nearing the church. I noticed another police car coming in the other direction towards me and I felt anxious and thought “oh dear” as my indicators were not working and I would now be pulled over again. So I quickly pulled into the church car park. I then left the car unlocked and tried to enter the church only to find the doors locked. I then felt certain the police

were about to come back to the car and check it out. I had lots of things in side, which looked like I was moving house but to a policeman it would look like I had robbed a house. Not wanting to face another interrogation from the police I decided I would just leave the car and come back to it later. So I went around the back of the church, walked up the road and rang up Esther to find out where she was, but first I had to climb a fence, a wooden spiked fence. As I straddled the wooden spiky fence, I slipped and felt the spike go up into my groin. I was stuck, in pain, straddle across a fence, almost hanging by my testicles. This was because I did not want another rectification certificate for my indicator lamps or a fine.

I managed to get down from the fence and hobble up the road. My inside legs felt wet and warm. It was not too painful so I hobbled to the phone and found out where Esther was.

After this I decided I had had enough. I thought to myself - what I am doing here hobbling about in pain waiting for the police to leave me alone. I told myself that I would return the car, confront the police, and just go home, as it was only the winkers that had stopped working. I was hoping that the police had gone by now.

As I walked back down Hunts Pond Road the police car had parked along side my Fiesta. I marched up to them and asked directly could I help them, as they were busy checking the car over. I had left the doors unlocked and they were now checking to see if I owned the car. They could see all the stuff in side and it must have looked as though I had robbed a house. They asked me who I was and did the car belong to me and what was I doing. I then explained to them I had come to collect my daughter but the youth group had closed earlier and she had been picked up. By this time a returned radio call to the police radio confirmed I was the owner of the car (Thankfully I had it registered in my name and it was taxed and I had an insurance certificate). They then left me and I drove home. The winkers were not even mentioned.

All I did was retire to bed as I was not well and did not see the damage that I had done by being spiked with the wooden stake. I slept in my clothes and called for help the next morning. When my wife -to- be came, who was a nurse, she said I must go to hospital as I was damaged. The stake had pierced my left testicle sack and blood was everywhere, all down

my trouser legs and it was difficult to see the extent of the damage.

After going to QA Hospital I was examined and it was felt I would have to go to St Mary’s Hospital for surgery, as it was a severe wound. It was there that two male Indian doctors dealt with me. “This won’t hurt,” said one of them and I saw like a huge syringe needle in the other mans hand. They opened my legs (I felt very embarrassed and humiliated when they asked how it happened) they thought that I was a burglar running from the police.

I was sewn up and eventually released

It was a very near close shave and I felt God had a sense of humour and I must learn a lesson. I wonder if you could tell me the lesson. E-mail me with your thoughts. The torn jeans were hung up in my lounge for a along time as a token to remember.

My House Becomes Full

The next inmate was Rob White, a friend of Sean, who had nowhere to live, so he had Baldrick’s bedroom. Rob had a small Jack Russell, called Sally, and shortly after that Rob’s girl friend Carla Walsh needed short-term accommodation. Carla was only 16 years old and I was informed her mother had kicked her out. She moved in as well - I had tried to get alternative accommodation with a girl called Angie - which is another story. Needless to say Carla and Sally ended up at number 2 Hayling Close.

Our Household



Sam Jones& Bruno, Carla, Sally, Rob and Joe Neve

By this time Alan had met a girl called Samantha Jones from Manchester and she bravely moved to Fareham to be with Alan. Sam had a son called John and a small Jack Russell, called Bruno and they were looking for a home of their own. They all ended up at number 2 Hayling Close. Sam’s son John spoke with

an accent just as I had done when I moved at 5 years old from Oldham to Watford. He would always ask me technical questions about how to repair things and Sam soon realised he had become my apprentice.

Sam and Alan



John my apprentice

Joe’s friend Kinder soon wanted somewhere to live as he had just come out of prison so the lounge had to be his room. The lounge had been my room and so I had to move out.

If you have tried to live in a house with 10 or 11 people and two small Jack Russell’s - it is quite taxing. Sometimes Sean and his friends would stay the night so the house was quite full. It was Rob and Carla that cause a bit of a stress as they always left their washing up undone. They always denied it so I ended up by installing a “No bodies washing up sink” , which I had managed to scavenge from Harrod’s.

How To Deal With No bodies Washing Up



No bodies “Washing Up Sink”

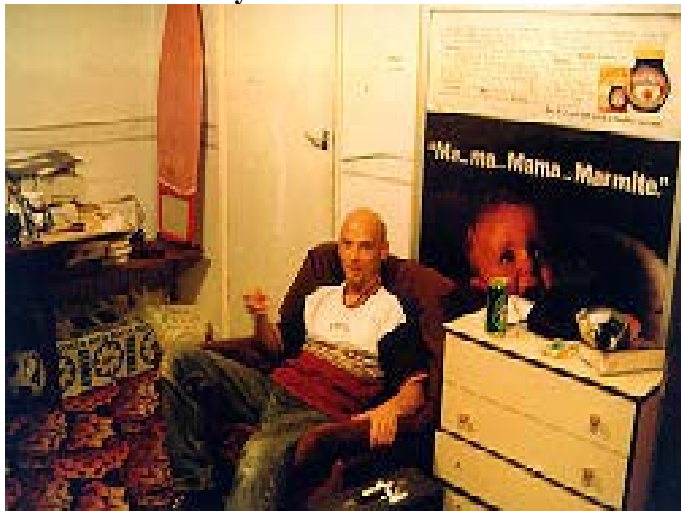
The House Court

About this time my go-kart, which had been given

me by a farmer who attended in Wantage Strict Baptist Chapel many years ago, was stolen from outside my wife's- to- be house in Stubbington.

After making a few enquiries I found out who had taken it so I decided rather than get these youngsters (16 year olds) into trouble with the police I would give them a chance. I spoke to one of the culprit's mothers (he is P.R. of Stubbington) and told her what I intended to do and she was most obliging and appreciated me not involving the police. I knew where the kart was and went to the house and sure enough the lad was there. I simply said I had come to collect the kart. He was unable to say a word as there it was in the back garden, so I got him to help me put it in the Fiesta. I told him that I wanted to see him and his friend at 8.00 p.m. the next day as I was taking them to my house for a hearing.

Alan Macarthy



Alan the House Court Judge

At 8 p.m. the next night, I collected these two lads (their names are withheld) and I had assembled in the lounge at number 2 Hayling Close a lounge villain, ex-convicts, friends and renowned characters from Fareham. Rob White's brother was there, who has just been released from prison. These made up the court. Alan McCarthy was the judge.

The two 16 year olds stood (in there peer group they would have been considered cool and hard) as quiet as mice. I think they were asked whether they pleaded guilty or very guilty. After listening to me, then to David White, and a few others they were warned of the dangers of stealing goods etc. We did not want them ending up like some of us. They were fined £25 (the cost of a powder coat re-spray) and given time to pay. The money was paid on time. We

heard no more about these lads. I hoped they learned their lesson. If you know them get them to e- mail me as they are on my list. nbpttc@yahoo.co.uk

I Move Into A Tent In The Back Garden

My lodgers were generally people who really needed help. Their friends began to want to live with us and gradually the house was full. Of course the neighbours found this household too much to cope with and some believed that we had become a religious sect.

I decided after this time to move out in the garden to make room for Kinder, Joe's friend. So I built a spacious tent in the garden out of scaffold poles and an awning from Harrod's. It was a lovely (tent) room. I had a wardrobe, drawers, and table hi.fi. system etc. Some said I was like Lawrence of Arabian living in the comfort of a lovely tent in the summer. I enjoyed my stay that summer but then the winter came.

The Garden Where I Lived



David's Tent

Inside David's Tent

At that time one of my mature students from Fareham College offered me a room in his house, in Locks Heath. I stayed here until November 1996, when I had planned to marry Silver Girl and then we could live together. This was to avoid Fareham Borough Council charging us with over- crowding a domestic residence.

Lads at number 2 Hayling Close



The Tent Comes Down Sean and his friends

All these lads are on "Dave's List"

Do I Need A Good Woman Or A Minder?

On reflection, as I look over this period of my life, I realise that I was not safe living on my own but rather needed a good woman behind me but some

would say I needed a minder. I'm of the opinion that if Silver Girl been a real help to me, the neighbours would have been spared an awful lot of trouble. She would have been sensitive enough to help with the situations that arose and ensured that I considered the neighbours.

It is for this reason I now blame Silver Girl for all the troubles that the neighbour's had at Hayling Close J. If had we been living together in a proper relationship she would have ensured the neighbours were not troubled by the things I got up to. Instead she was living away from me, as a single parent, doing a full time job. I now maintain that had she been the homemaker I wanted and not the stereotypical women chauvinist, claiming equal rights with men, then the neighbours would have had a reasonable time through her help. So I really feel that Hayling Close had Silver Girl to blame for all their troubles, to this day. That is my story and I am sticking to it (tongue in cheek).

A Fresh Look At Christian Marriage

At this time I began to take a fresh look at Christian marriage and studied what the Bible had to say. When sharing my findings with Silver Girl she agreed and we wanted a Christian marriage. I thought that much of societies troubles of the day were due to the influence of television and programs which portrayed the modern views of the world, many of which I believed were wrong. In particular I blamed the inequalities between men and women and the over reaction in society to redress these problems. I felt that those women who were claiming equal rights with men were contributing to all the evils in the world. My conclusions and my understanding of what a Christian marriage is all about are recorded in Chapter 30 of this book. I accepted every tenet and sought to live this way with Silver Girl.

I began to learn, through the many arguments I had with Silver Girl, and those problems that I had with women in the past, that the problems were due to them having lost sight of their created roles as helpers. They had become dictators. In every case that I had met I noticed such women loose their beauty and become the proverbial nag, or nagger. At one time such women would have been ducked in the ducking stool (I.e. a trial by water) as being a witch i.e. one that control a man by subtlety. Maybe that was my manic reaction to my trouble with women.

It took me a long time and much pain to realise

that women are far more sensitive to situations than men and that women are best to judge such issues, which cause others to be upset. Men just do not think. They certainly do not think like women. Hence my new proposed book "Electronics made easy", which is a humorous book making use of those differences between men and women, by describing the operations of complicated electronic circuits in a new light. I tried this out whilst teaching students about the operation of a tuned circuit whilst at Fareham College, the inductor having the characteristics of a man whilst the capacitor has the characteristics of woman. My students loved my illustrations. We made a video of one lecture and I am sure John Cleese would find it most amusing.

Seeking to help Alan and Sam

On one occasion Silver Girl and I went to help Alan and Sam as Alan had gone out for the evening with his friends to a night club, leaving Sam on her own and she was concerned that Alan might be returning to his former bad habits. We both went to see Sam and I suggested it would be good for us to pray together for her and with her as I had hoped that they might find God's help. In conversation I said to Silver Girl, when referring to Alan who had gone off to the nightclub, "There go I but for the grace of God". In other words if I did not have Christian values, I might be just like Alan, wanting to go out to a nightclub, with his mates, when I could have been at home with my family and not seeking the life of single man, without responsibilities.

This really caused Silver Girl to react, she fell really insecure, and wanted to talk about the matter immediately rather than give Sam the support we had come to give. I was aware that this was just the beginning of another row and wanted to talk to talk about it later, not in front of Sam. So I refused to talk about it there and then. The atmosphere at number 2 went so tense that Sam left and went to her room, and of course we were of no help or comfort to her. Eventually Silver Girl got up and left, walking or getting a taxi back to her home. She felt I was saying that I wanted to go out just like Alan and that it was only the fact that I believed in God that prevented this. She feared that if ever I turned away from God then would be off leaving her. This of course is nonsense. Every Christian will admit the human heart is capable of many wrong things and that God is the one who

132

MICHAEL AND THE PHILIPPINES

Chapter 36

keeps them from falling. I am not sure if this matter was ever resolved or if Silver Girl understood what I was saying or meant.

36 Michael and the Philippines

“Paradise Express” 1995

Michael during this time had new ideas and sought to develop his ideas to form a travel business. He had met Freddy Laker earlier in his life and put together his business plan; “Paradise Express” and he informed me of what he intended to do in the Philippines in February, 1995. He had been to Angeles City, in the Philippines, and identified many nightclubs, hotels and travel attractions and agreed to work with those businesses already functioning in the sex industry. Michael intended to sell package tours aimed at single men, to take advantage of those attractions already functioning. I felt it was wrong. I had already spoken to him, at our mum and dad’s home, after I had seen his advertising for his “Paradise Express”. He was advertising holidays, in the English National newspapers, for persons to enjoy the sexual attractions, which was offered in Angeles City, in the Philippines.

The Brochure



Front & rear cover of “Paradise Express”

He maintained it was all right that they loved that sort of thing and every one was into it. He maintained that it was perfectly above board and legitimate. However I was not happy about it and asked him how would he like some man to use his daughter Jessica as a sexual attraction and be one of the girls he was advertising. He said he wouldn’t but out there they are different – and maintained they loved it

Michael is Arrested in the Philippines

It was a very shocking and sad to hear the news in

June 1995 on the television, that Tuesday lunchtime, at Fareham College. It was announced that an English sex tour operator had been arrested and remanded in custody in the Philippines, to await a trial.

At that time I had no real idea what the actual charges were against him but realised it was to do with his travel business, involving all the existing exotic nightlife and sex attractions in Angeles City. I had no idea that the allegation was to do with child prostitution.

The ITN news at 10, that evening, showed a video clip of Michael apparently directing an enquirer to a child prostitute. The pictures were very convincing and I felt very sad and groaned in side, I was shocked because I had no reason to ever think Michael would be involved with child prostitution. He had always been straightforwardly blatant with what he had done in the past and so I had no reason to believe he was involved now in the said sad and awful crime until now.

Michael had written to the Eastbourne Herald asking Anne Marie Shields to contact mum and dad as he could get not through to them. He wrote, “I’m fine but the thought of being on possible Death Row is getting to me. My attorney is great so far we a winning. An armed escort has transferred me from the military jail and I am now at the Headquarters N.B.I. Olongopo City”.

No doubt Mum and dad were not responding the way Michael wanted this was probable due to the last time he got in trouble in Bangkok, Thailand. Mum had to do so much for him and deal with all his affairs. Mum had become ill and couldn’t deal with the demands he kept placing on them for financial help and dealing with his affairs in England.

Our Mother Dies

It was the 29th February 1996, that my mother died, leaving my father a widower and the stated cause of death being pulmonary embolism, deep vein thrombosis of the leg and Coronary artery thrombosis and atherosclerosis. I was of the opinion that the awful news of Michaels arrest in June 1995 and imprisonment in the Philippines, was contributory to her death as I felt she really died of a broken heart.

No Sympathy for my Brother

I too had little sympathy for Michael because Mum had bailed him out of Prison (for not paying he

Chapter 36

MICHAEL AND THE PHILIPPINES

133

visa) in Thailand and no sooner had come home he was off and gone to the Philippines and was in trouble again. His travel business was immoral (from my point of view) as it was trading on the promiscuous nature of persons not bound by Christian values. It was encouraging fornication and I was opposed to him and this activity and I had told him so, before he went to the Philippines. Just like I warned Ken Knight about his bogus insurance scam.

I learned later that Michael had protested his innocence from the beginning and maintained that a certain Fr. Shay Cullen, an Irish Priest, was behind the set up and apparently it was he who directed the ITV news video crew to entrap him on Baloy Beach.

The full NBI report of this incident was brought to me by Suny Wilson, the English man who was sentenced to death, on 16th September 1996, after he was acquitted, on the 19th December 1999, when he returned to the UK. This report clears Michael of the said charges but seriously indicts Fr. Shay Cullen. I never saw this report until January 2000 some 5 years after the event. This information is all recorded in my publication Trojan Warriors.

Michael was set up (entrapment)

Michael had been found guilty of “Promoting child prostitution”, in the Philippines in October 1996 and sentenced to a term 14 to 16 years. To be served in New Bilibid Prison. Muntinlupa City, Philippines. Had always protested his innocence. His sentence was announced on national ITV news and it was the previous ITN news clips, which were used as evidence to convict him in the Philippine court. It was awful it made him out to be selling children for sex. The exact nature of the offences was not clear from the News item.

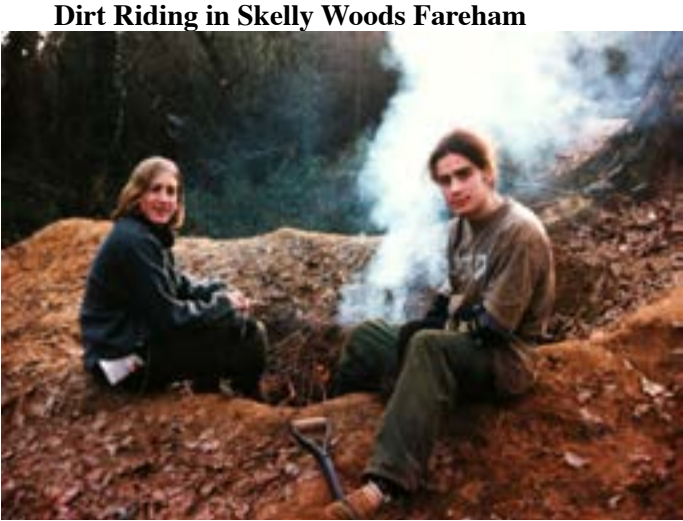
I had written to Michael several times and I found it difficult really believe he had been selling or promoting child prostitution, as the ITN TV camera portrayed. He had written to me and I have the whole story written in his own hand, as to how he was “set up” by Martin Cottingham, Adam Holloway and Fr. Shah Cullen.

Michael maintains the TV camera was cut and spliced to make out he was doing some thing he was not. He also describes what actually took place between Malcolm Cottingham and his friend Adam Holloway, as they pretended to be holiday seekers with Paradise Express.

Michael was very bitter against Shay Cullen and this showed in his letter to me, he really believes him to be the real culprit of these evil actions. He outlined his life style as a man having a luxury life style and in a lovely mansion with bodyguards etc. And soliciting funds from abroad, using headline-catching news to attract further funds from abroad. These things he wrote in his letters.

Crime Prevention Programs

Whilst Michael was suffering in prison in the Philippines I was at home reassessing my own life in light of my returning Christian convictions and responsibilities towards my children. I was concerned about Isaac’s future and wanted to keep him from becoming a criminal. It is on reflection that I am now able to define certain social activities as CPP’s because these were identified as the best way to meet people and steer them away from crime. This meant joining recreation groups or inviting them to join you in any creative activity. I believe these programs are necessary to prevent crime. Also to bring fulfillment to those involved because generally people who are creative need to be actively engaged in good social activity, otherwise they are prone to be involved in crime, in one way or another. One such CPP is that of the BMX social network, which Isaac my son got involved in when he was 13 or 14 years old. And to do this he needed a BMX bike.



Isaac and Luke Fuller at Skelly Woods

Any way Isaac got involved in BMX riding and made many friends and at that time they got into “dirt” riding and him and his BMX’ers made Skelly Woods into a great BMX dirt track. The Council eventually kicked them out which was a real shame.

Portsmouth Skate Park

This was the place were many BMX’ers road their bikes and met many of their friends. And it was there that I first meet Dennis WIngham who did a back flip on his old battered BMX. I was very impressed. It was here that Isaac got hooked into what I call a CPP (Crime Prevention Program) as it kept him busy and out of trouble. It provided a social network for friendship and good activity, which is better, them crime. There are sensible and famous people at the Skate Park such as Ephraim Catlow, Isaac Clarke, Denis WIngham, Jim Stevens, Rodney Burnham, Jamie Knipe, Colin Hunt, Martin Hunt, Ronnie Johnson (Remo) DJ Jon Pratt, John Hopkins, Richards Wells, Stephen Drain (Drainer) Anthony Pill (Pill) and many more.

Hasting and Backyard

Another yearly event for BMX’ers was an event held near Hastings where BMX’er from all over the country, including riders from America would come and ride. It was a real good event and most people camped overnight on common ground. I took Isaac, Esther and their friends in my Transit van and that was were we slept. These CPP’s, such as Portsmouth Skate Park and Backyard events involve those participating in good recreational activities thus keeping them busy, out of trouble and good creative competitive fun.

On Top of my Van



Isaac Luke and friends at Backyard event in Hastings

Isaac Clarke King of Southsea 2011

The evidence that confirms my believes is that Isaac got linked into BMX and skate board riding from an early age and this year won the 2011 King of Southsea Award. He has never been to prison and managed to avoid becoming a criminal. Unlike me who became a convicted criminal at the age of 17



Isaac’s King of Southsea Trophy

Other Criminal Prevention programs

Realizing the value of such program’s I began to get involved in all sorts of social activities, which involved Music, Drama, Art, Public Relations. This was the time of my separation from my second marriage, which I will be speaking about later. It kept me busy and occupied and also opened up social networks which enabled me to meet other and share the gospel with them on their terms. There are such a programs such as Faith and Foot Ball, involving Pompy players such as Darren Moore, Linvoy Primus and Mick Mellows. I am sure there are others programs but such programs are needed in our day to prevent the kind of riots that we have recently witnessed in our country.

Being In The World Not Of The World

Through my experience and getting involved with these activities I have just mentioned I realized there was not virtue in isolating oneself from the world like some religious people believed we should do. There are many religious groups like this and have such mentality such as the Brethren, Strict Baptists, Jehovah’s Witnesses and so on. I also believed we should be leaders of men rather than followers and it was good to be in touch with critical issues of our time rather than be “several steps behind’. Those that are several steps behind seek to provide answers to questions that people are no longer asking. I believed it was right to be both relevant and different as if we fail to be relevant, we cannot be heard. Also if we fail to be different, we have nothing to say. In the meaning of John 17:14–15 14·I have given them your word, and the world has hated them because they are not of the world, just as I am not of the world. ¹⁵I do not ask that you take them out of the world, but that

you keep them from the evil one.

BMX stunt at Portsmouth Harbour (1995)

During this time my son Isaac rode his BMX with the riders from Portsmouth and I went from time to time to meet the lads at Portsmouth Skate Park. On this occasion these lads were having some fun riding and old BMX bike, up a ramp and over harbour wall, and into the sea. One Sunday afternoon Esther and her friend Emma Jean was there and I had with me my daughter Elly and Jim Gold and we arrived in my Fiesta. It looked great fun riding into the sea on this bike so I decided to have ago. I had never done it before and wanted to pull off a back flip, so I asked some of the lads how to do it. I followed their instructions to the “T” and sure enough up, up and over; I managed to pull off my first back flip on a BMX into the sea. The crowed was great they cheered me on. My daughters were getting concerned and begged me not to do it again s it looked dangerous but I wasn’t deterred.

Back flip over the Fiesta

To make it more fun I drove my Fiesta side ways on, at the harbour edge, and got the lads to put the ramp up against it. I was going to do a back flip, jumping the Fiesta into the harbour. Thankfully Dennis Wingham took the lead, with his crash hat on, and pulled of a great back flip over the Fiesta in the sea. My turn next, I had no crash hat, and my girls were begging me not to do it but I peddle as hard as I could, up the ramp, up into the air, pulled back and sure enough a back flip landing in the sea. The crowd gave a great cheer and coming out of the water, on camera was asked how old I was and had to think for a moment. I was 45 years old. The cried He’s the King.

[Here is the video link to The Harbour Jump](#)



Harbour Jumping Video

Jim Stevens Rodney Burnham Keith Cowern Jamie Knipe Colin Hunt Martin Hunt Isaac Clarke, Dennis WIngham, Ronnie Johnston (Remo) DJ Jon Pratt, John Hopkins, Richard Wells, Stephen Drain (Drainer), Anthony Pill (Pill) and loads of the rest of the old Southsea skate park locals... Were all there.

My Divorce August 1996

As far as I was concerned my former marriage ended at the time my wife decided to divorce me and I accepted this because of what I had done. However it took a long time to complete the legal process and finalize the divorce, which took place on the 26th August 1996.

My future

Would I ever marry Silver Girl ?

I was working through my beliefs in respect to what the bible said about wronging, divorce, remarriage and I knew from my knowledge of God that my sins would have to be dealt for me in order for me to receive benefit and help from God. I knew from the bible that this provision had already been made the Son of God, Jesus Christ, dying for sins, the sins the world. It was in this provision that I trusted and believed in God. I could have no relationship with God whilst I was still in my sins and they had to be forgiven. I believed God for the forgiveness of sins and the gift of righteousness. I had done what I thought I needed in to put things right with my wife and family. Silver Girl and I had promised each other to have a Christian marriage. We went through many struggles and conflicts of conscience and sometimes I feared the worst would come upon us. I endured many painful feelings and many struggles in conscience

being accused in conscience of many things and felt I had wronged my children, as they too had gone through all kinds of hurt. All of which I regret having put them through it all. I wanted to be at peace with and all those that I had involved.

Silver Girl experienced much insecurity as she felt I would be returning to my wife at any moment. She began to reason we had both used her in order to repair our marriage and that I would return to my wife and then she would now suffer loss. It was this insecurity that made her fell the need to separate from me in order to avoid getting hurt. This of course bread insecurity in me, as I could not bare the thought of her leaving me.

Having re-looked at marriage and what the bible has to say about it I came to believe that my marriage to Silver Girl took place the moment we had exchanged or promises to each other, which had taken place in September, 1996. I say this because there are no instructions, or examples in the bible, as to how a marriage actually takes place. So I concluded this must be culturally defined and not dictated by God. I also learned that a legal marriage can be and may well be a very real help to couples feeling insecure. I now think that marriage, as is commonly known in our culture, is a reasonable practice. I wanted to be legally married to my partner as soon as I was legally divorced in August 1996, but this was delayed. However this was not to be and would come later.

The Place of our Marriage

Rebekah's Field is the place where Silver Girl and I exchanged our promises of marriage. A time and place, which was far more romantic than the Registry Office, and as far as I was concerned was the time and place of our marriage. It was in September 1996 and was beside the horse trough in Rebekah's Field, Stubbington.

I was so delighted about the event that I wrote a song about the situation and this is called "Rebekah's Field". This song was sung at Oliver's Bar, in Gosport, when our band entered a Beat the Band competition on 5th May in 2000 as I will relate later on. Video lins below:

[Here is the Video Rebekah's Field at Home](#)
[Rebekah's Field Olivers Bar Gosport](#)



The Horse Trough in Rebekah's Field

As I look back on this event I believe I must have been on a manic high as I also sung my other song, "Can your Remember", at the same event.

A Wedding reception at Asda

I began to feel much happier at the prospect of us living together as man and wife and we both wanted a simple and legal ceremony, at the Fareham Registry Office. How ever upon reflection I realize my mood was rising and I was high as we were preparing for a simple wedding and I took Silver Girl's off the cuff comment about having wedding reception in Asda quite literally and arranged it with the management at Asda, in Fareham. I simply asked if we could have our wedding reception in their store and the management were very obliging. Once the local news got hold of our plans they were very interested in the story and before we knew it local and national newspapers published the story. This was all too much for Silver Girl and she pulled out of the wedding. However this didn't stop the story going to the press. Here is the story:

FAREHAM / Pressure too much for bride-to-be
(THE NEWS, Friday, November 22, 1996)

Asda reception couple put their wedding on ice

By TANYA JOHNSON

A Fareham couple due to celebrate their marriage with a reception in a supermarket have postponed their wedding.

David Clarke and Silver Girl were due to tie the knot at Fareham Register Office this afternoon.

The ceremony was to be followed with a reception

in the self-service cafeteria at Asda in Fareham

More then 20 guests were expected for a £2.50 -a-head meal of roast chicken, lasagne and hot pot.

Yesterday Dave 47, contacted The News to say that is was not going ahead. "I regret to say the pressure has been too much", he said. "Silver Girl has called off the wedding."

It is too much for her to cope with. I am very upset.

Dave an engineering lecturer at Fareham College did not elaborate on his girlfriend's reason for cancelling the wedding.

Silver Girl who is expecting the couple's first child is a psychiatric nurse.

Both were getting married for the second time. Dave, of Hayling Close Fareham has four children from his first marriage, and his new wife lives in Stubbington and has two children.

Yesterday Dave said: "We want a nice wedding but without frills, which cost a lot of money. "But we hope the wedding will go ahead at a later date.

Continuing in their unconventional style he added: " I don't think my wife will be disappointed if I don't give her a wedding ring but I'm not sure how she will react to the ball and chain that I have made.

Just some Fun



Dave's Ball and Chain

He said he has not ruled out the possibility of a honeymoon in a tent he lives in this summer in the garden of his home.

The Asda Wedding



The News Fareham Paper

37 I Buy number 11 Hayling Close

With my future so uncertain I decided to buy a house of my own and had hoped it would become our marital home, if ever we finally go it together. This proved to be a good move, as I needed a retreat whenever Nurse Ratchet and I had a disagreement. Never the less I tried ever so hard to work on our relationship.

The Fareham Registry Office

We had always planned to get legally married as soon as I was free. However until that time I felt it a good thing to buy a house so that we could start our married life in a new home. I was able to complete the purchase of number 11 Hayling Close in January 1997 and move in straight away. By this time we had arranged our legal marriage at the Registry Office, which took place on 21st February 1997, with a reception at the Oast and Squire. On this occasion

I had to rearrange my teaching schedule that Friday afternoon for many of my students attended and after this we had our honeymoon in Bournemouth.

I know I was definitely on a manic high on that day as I took with me, in my chauffeur driven car, a manikin dummy dressed, in Silver Girl’s cloths, this was just in case Silver Girl did not turn up so I would then marry the dummy instead. I must have been on a high , I am sure I was. After our honeymoon were returned to my wife’s home in Stubbington and entered the next phase of our life together.

I Build Extra Room Above The Garage

We never did move into our house at 11 Hayling Close but rather made our family home in the house belonging to my wife. We then lived together for the first time along with Silver Girls children.

I decided to build a workshop in the garage and an extra room in the roof space of the garage, which we called The Den. It had a purpose built stair way, leading from the garage, up to the room and a small door leading through the wall into the boys bedroom, with a lock and key for private access. I then fitted a velox window giving plenty of light to the room. It was great and my wife’s son and his friends loved it, as they often had sleep overs there.

I also made the garage my workshop were I could repair the items I had bought from Harrod’s. It was a good workshop.

My Father Dies

After my mothers death in 1996 my father lived alone, in their home at Eastbourne, until 3rd March 1997, when he died of the same problem as our mum, Pulmonary embolism and Deep vein thrombosis of the leg. My brother Michael and I along with my sister were left money in their will and I was then able to write and inform Michael, who was in New Bilibid Prison of this. Although it was very sad for us all it was a real help to Michael, as he could not go about clearing his name and getting released from prison, in the Philippines. It is money that it needed, particularly if you are a foreigner and in jail.

An Insecure Marriage

During this time I had been subjected to divorce from my first wife, which involved a long legal battle regarding money. This was unusual because we had been divorced in August 1996 and my father had died in May 1997. For some reason the financial settlement had not take place at the time of

our divorce and subsequently settled in court, after my fathers death. Prior to this I had the news of my brothers 16-year prison sentence in the Philippines in October 1996. And it seamed as though one bad thing followed another. I also saw the devastating effects of my marriage break up upon my children, which I could not share with Silver Girl, as this would only serve to increase her insecurity. I could see their needs and knew that I had been responsible for the hurt that I had plunged them into. I felt totally insecure and felt Silver Girl would leave me or tell me to go. The Insecurity that we both felt was great and marriage do not bring the security I needed and thought it would. It was a real problem and without speaking about things too personal I had to seek God, more, and more, and more, as life went on. I needed help from God because I was not managing or coping well at all with my daily life. The stress that I found myself experiencing was unbearable and I eventually sought personnel counselling from “Off the Record”, at Fareham College.

Financial Settlement Divorce Won’t Help

During this time we spoke to Nurse Ratchet’s solicitor because she was anxious about my former wife’s financial legal claim on her assets. She was distressed saying she did not want her getting her hands on her mothers money; money that had been left her, when she was married to her previous husband, by her mother. That money was used to increase the value of their home and she wanted her children to benefit and not my former wife. We were led to believe she might have some valid claim because we were now married and joint incomes were taken into account in financial settlements. She said she would do anything to stop her getting her hands on her mother’s money.

Taking Silver Girl’s words and meaning literally, I asked the solicitor a hypothetical question saying, “How would we stand if we were divorced”? To which I was informed of the impractical nature and legality of such a plan. This how ever was the cause of our next series of arguments and Nurse Ratchet reported this incident to one of the elders of our church saying that I had proposed a divorce, leaving her devastated. Of course this was nonsense and there was no way that I could reassure her otherwise. She maintained I was proposing a divorce, causing her to feel so insecure with me.

I Was A Murderer

At one time she awoke in the early hours of the morning with the notion that I was a murderer and had killed a prostitute at Port Solent. She had concluded this because she had noticed, a few weeks earlier, that my attention had been drawn to the headline news on the TV, about the murder of a prostitute at Port Solent. She concluded that the reason why I took notice of this news item was because I was the murderer. It was crazy, I could not reason with her, even after explaining that the reason why it took notice of the news was because the incident had taken place so near our home. It was shocking. As a result of this crazy dream she wanted a divorce and went to see the minister of the church at the Locks Heath to discuss divorce.

The Spare Rib

Another incident took place involving my comment about the delectability of a spare rib. This argument was number 365. One evening I was eating out with Silver Girl and her brother and his girl friend at “Chiquito’s” in Port Solent. During the meal I simple expressed my pleasure and how tasty the spare rib was, stating that I felt it was intoxicating. This phrase “Intoxicating” generated a chilled silent mood in Nurse Ratchet, which was felt by all and a dark cold cloud descend upon us all at the meal. Not a word was spoken, for the rest of the meal, and Nurse Ratchet’s brother asked, “was there a private issue going on between us?”

I was not told about the reason of this chilled silence until later on that evening. It was then I learned that Nurse Ratchet had believed, understood and stated, that I was rubbing something in to make her feel bad. I had no idea what she was talking about, however it turned out that I had used this word, “intoxicating”, a few months earlier during a conversation with a friend of hers. On that occasion I was asked to express how I felt about an experience I had with another woman some years ago. I simply said that it was, “intoxicating”. Nothing more was said.

Nurse Ratchet however picked up on this word and stated that at the meal table in Chiquito’s I was taunting her by saying the spare rib was intoxicating. She insisted I was deliberately saying this word to upset her and make her feel bad. This of course was nonsense but there was no way that I could convince her otherwise. Such a thing would not have entered

my mind to do.

Rebekah Is Born

My wife gave birth to our lovely little girl on the 8 June 1997, at Queen Mary’s Hospital in Portsmouth. She had very dark hair and blue eyes when she was born. And as she grew up I got her to help me. Even to repair items that I had bought from Harrod’s.



Rebekah and her daddy helping him
in the workshop at our house in Stubbington

My workshop was set up to repair the many items I bought from Harrod’s and by this time Harrod’s had moved from Abshott to Segensworth. It was there that many of my students did there shopping. In fact one of my students, Lenny Butler, actually worked at Harrod’s and he was a very intelligent student. We laughed at some of his ideas about repairing electrical goods; for example instead of replacing a fuse, in a piece of electrical goods, with the correct size and rating, he would insert a nail or wrap silver paper around the broken one and more often that not it would work. That was Lenny for you.

Our first Holiday away in France

This was a disaster as far as I was concerned. Rebekah was a few months old, Nurse Ratchet’s had friends in France and we were able to stay there. We took her son and his friend in a Mitsubishi Space Wagon that I had renovated. I don’t know what the trouble was but Nurse Ratchet went into none of her cold chilled none communicative moods and I notice she pick holes in all that I did.

Insecurity

How ever the insecurity we both found our new marriage was real problem that we both felt and

without speaking about things personal I had to seek God more and more as life went on. I needed the help of God because I was not managing or coping very well at all. The problems involved the relationship between the children of our former marriages and my new wife, the proverbial stepmother. After we had been arguing for several days and as a result expressed my beliefs about the relationship between men and women. I shared my concluding observations with Nurse Ratchet saying I now believed that any relationship between a man and woman could not work in harmony, without the help of God.

My belief Sends Destresses Silver Girl

This observation of concluding belief of mine sent my wife around the bend, and she was very upset with me. She wanted to know what would I do if I ever turned away from God again and we were having difficulties- would I remain married to her? She had totally missed the point as to what I meant.

I had come to the conclusion that we both needed to apply Christian principles in our marriage, to resolve the many personal difficulties that we were facing, and the many personal arguments we were involved in, so we could survive. In other words the scripture outlined general rule and guidelines on how to relate to each other a way that enabled the Lion to lay down with the lamb, so to speak, and the lamb not get devoured by the lion. Hence taking heed to the word of God was having God in ones life. I felt we both needed such help. Unfortunately she just could not see my argument and she felt threatened by it. I could not assure her otherwise.

I believed that if we had both been resolved to seek the Lord and be directed by His word in every thing then we would be blessed with a God honouring marriage, in other words a harmonious loving, happy family life. Any thing less than this would be a failure and second best.

I questioned Nurse Ratchet as to why she was upset but she would not explain this to me. She later wrote to me but lost the reply and so she wrote again to explain her upset. Her reply is entitled “Marriage” and included in this articl

Help Of God Needed

I had stated to Nurse Ratchet that the bible contained instructions as to how we should love each other and go about resolving difficulties i.e. 1 Cor.

13 verses 1-13. I stated that all of these God given, inclinations and abilities, to live at piece one with another, are given to those seeking God. That we should pray to the Lord to grant us supplies of these special abilities. That we are called upon to exercise these gifts in our times of difficulty this is the help of God without, which there will be no harmony.

I maintained, “God has spoken to us”. I maintained that unless we take heed to these directives and exercise these graces such as patience, long suffering, forgiveness in our marriage, then the relationship is doomed to failure. In our case we need God’s help and we should not to ignore it.

Nurse Ratchet objected to this (she being a trained adult mental health nurse) by saying there were many none Christian marriages that have good relationships without God. So I was wrong! Again she missed the point.

I went on to explain that I believed that many people exercise love; patience etc. With one another because they have learned that is the best way forward. It is in fact the way, which God approves of and directs. They have learned it from their past experience, traditional up bringing, or what ever, but in the end they are only doing those things that God has so freely spoken about in the scripture. That is why their marriages work. You might say a pound spent in Manchester and a pound spent in London was equally valid and it did not matter if was spent by an atheist, Muslim or Christian. The pound spent was good currency because it was the currency of the realm.

I stated since God has made man in his own image he may use the natural gifts of love, patience, forgiveness and long suffering, as these work, and so their that is why they have successful marriages without realizing they have been helped by God.

I was saying that we needed the help of God in our relationship and marriage in order to survive. Just like these people. They may be unbelievers and deny the existence of God but they posses and display those natural gifts of wisdom, which God had given them. That was what we needed. I believed however the we needed to learn directly for the bible and exercise the directives given to us plainly in His Word because to that day our marriage was not working. I believed we were doomed to failure because we hadn’t learn these natural laws. I felt this was the same with every

thing connected to the Christian religion. This is the same with every thing. In Churches who seek to go contrary to the Word of God and promote thing opposed to the plain teaching of Scripture they are doomed to failure. Just like appointing women elders or homosexual bishops.

I also mean that the moment the marriage relationship ceases to reflect the image of Christ loving His Church and the Churches submission to Christ it is a failure and not functioning as the designed purpose of God. When this happens, as was happening to us we both suffer loss. Distress of mind and soul and feel all the in-securities that it exposes one too.

What I have said before about me not leaving is true. I will never leave you. If you kick me out and insist I go; then that is different. But I would not leave because I have promised you and I keep my word; that is the image of God in me.

What may happen to others depends upon their own view and way of acting. I have promised never to leave you on any grounds, misery, despair or any reason. What more can you require?

I would not leave you and go off with another women, because of what we have together if our marriage fails. This is because I believe a failing marriage can be restored if we follow Christ

I would like to know that this is your vowed intent too i.e. Not to leave or divorce me because of your promise or covenant of marriage.

David Clarke2nd December 1997.

Do not let the sun go down on your wrath- in other words sort out the problem with the other person before you sleep that night.

Love one another-consider the other person before you say or do anything.

Husbands love your wives as Christ loved the church.

Wives reverence your husbands.
Children obey your parents in the Lord.
Etc

Our Seperation

Without going ino deatials about the difficulties we faced and were unable to handle we seperated on the 4th November 1998 when I left and retreated to 11 Hayling Close, dreading the future, as I felt so low in my mood.

Nurse Ratchet had repeatedly stated old me to leave and if I wouldn’t go she would get her ex husband to come and remove my things. I finally realized I would have to go and so I made all the necessary preparations, regarding finance and securing my personal things. I left the morning of that day, as I knew once I had gone I would have no cooperation from Nurse Ratchet to resolve anything. It was with great sadness that I learned, to my dismay, that Nurse Ratchet had purposely been very difficult and awkward with me, those weeks before hand, in order to drive me out and away from our home. I learned this after reading her secret diary written in October 98.

Diary Entry

The entry reads,
“The more horrible you are to someone the more Dave is drawn to them-- he always sides with the ones being got at. So I’ll be even more horrible and he may go to his darlings. His loyalty to me is disgusting.”

I realise this now that this accounted for her unacceptable behaviour towards my children and my subsequent desire to protect them from it was but a natural instinct and a Christian principle that I followed.

She continued to write, “I’m sick of hearing their names. I wish he’d just live with them at wonderful number 11”.

On Thursday 15th October, 1998 she wrote, “I’m am full of rage and feel sick and in knots. I hate all of them” --They have evil in them--they needed to be away from others.

Nurse Ratchet, the psychiatric nurse, had made up her mind about my children as can be seen by what she wrote and referred to them as the “KLU CLARKE CLAN.”



The Clu Clarke Clan

Summery
I would encourage my readers, who are considering marriage, and wish to know what the bible says about men and women relationships, to read and understand my article on Christian marriage.

Women Elders at Warsash
My times and difficulties in dealing with my wife was enough to put me on guard against the rise of women taking prominent places and positions of authority in our present age. Can you imagine how I felt when the following episode took place at the Warsash Church?

It was the beginning of the New Year; January of 1999, after some of the elders and members of the church had left to form a new group meeting, at the Hilton Hotel in Farlington. It was then announced that the elders of Warsash Church were asking for nominations to elect further elders and that these positions were open for women to apply. This took me by surprise. I understood the church was wishing to follow the New Testament pattern of church order and practice. After all they since called themselves the “Jesus is Lord” church and from my understanding this was going against His principles.

I recalled that they had asked me to join the church recently because they wanted to increase the membership and make a stand in the United Reformed denomination against two issue causing dispute at that time. The two issues were the appointing of homosexuals to leadership and the appointment of women elders.

When I raised my concern with the elders I was met with opposition and despite my documented evidence, pointing out scriptural reasons, showing their error I was finally told to remain silent whilst I continued going to the church. This was my cue to leave the church as conscience dictated a better path to take. It was then I wrote about this matter in my book entitled, “**Mary, Mary Quite Contrary**”, which is my response and opinion regarding the matter of women being elected to the position of elders in a church. The essence of the matter from a Christian point of view is this:

1 Since the fall of Adam God curses them both along with the serpent and the ground. Adam would suffer hardship, that thorns and thistles would grow, and so earn he would have to earn living by the sweat of his brow until the day he dies. To the woman he

said that she would be in great pain in childbirth and her natural desire would be to rule her husband but he must rule over her.

2 In Christian marriage the man is the head of his wife, in the way that Christ is the head of his church. As the church is to be subject to Christ so the woman is to be subject to her husband.

3 This order has to do with the fall of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden and since God placed this curse on His creation after the fall, then that order remains to this day.

4 We should follow the order, set by Christ, for all relationships between men, wife, children etc. And not think we know better.

This order of relationships still continues to this present day, as demonstrated by the fact that the curse, placed by God on his creation, still remains. Therefore so should the order between men, women, children, church and elders remain in the church?

I Leave The Church At Warsash
Needless to say I left the church and began meeting with our new group at the Hilton hotel in Farlington. Problems and difficulties in seeing my daughter Since our separation, in November 1998, I had serious problems in seeing our 18-month-old daughter as the nurse prevented my every move. Nurse Ratchet would not allow our daughter to see her brothers and sisters, the children of my first marriage. And it was David in particular she would not speak too, all because she had expressed how she felt to those at the Warsash church, when she heard I was to join the church.

In trying to resolve this matter I helped my son to write a letter of apology to the nurse so to resolve those outstanding issues.

38 Trouble At Fareham College

Whilst going through all these difficulties and emotional trials I am sure, as I look back, that I subconsciously created manic highs in order to avoid depression. This is my theory. Any way I did my utmost to be good at my job and also find another outlet to express my emotions.

In my endeavours to do my best for all my students I got my self into trouble at Fareham College, towards the end of the summer term. At that time of the year we held a practical examination, for the Electronic Servicing 224 course and I along with an external

assessor, from Portsmouth College, was responsible to conduct the practical tests for the RTEEB Examining Board and to mark their work and ensure there was no cheating. It was a recognised national standard test.

On this occasion one of my better students, who had paid for his own course fees, made a simple error in the test he was conducting. I noticed his mistake and realised that this could result in a failure. So I altered his script to read correctly. Unfortunately the external examiner noticed the change and alerted the senior management of the College. I justified this action, to myself, because I was the best person and only person to judge if this student was capable to do such practical work. He had proved himself to me over the two years I had taught him and I knew him to be good. He just simply made a mistake. Fortunately the student was unaffected as he has sufficient marks to pass regardless of my alteration but the matter was brought to a disciplinary hearing and I could have been dismissed. In mitigation I had several personal testimonials, from former students, speaking on my behalf regarding my previous good conduct and beneficial help they had all received, which resulted in me getting written warning for one year. One former student was Mike Fisher from Gosport and Michael Evans from Petersfield.

Steven Murry

During this time in May 1999, I had a mother call to my home, asking if I would provide accommodation for her step-son Steven Murray, who was 20 years old. He looked very much like my own son Isaac. I was reluctant to take him in as he was without work at that time and the only means of paying any form of rent was to apply for Housing Benefit. He assured me that he would find work very quickly so I gave him a chance and took him in.

I also felt I could help him and shared with him my past life and my Christian beliefs. I knew nothing of his past background although I sensed it had been difficult. I encouraged him to come to church with me and gave him s draft copy of my book Converted on LSD Trip.

I encouraged him to attend Fareham College and enrolled him on an electronics course, as he was very knowledgeable. I also encourage him to repair items that we had bought from Harrod’s and re-sell them to earn pocket money and he was very successful.

I took Steve to church with me and he showed

a keen interest in Christianity and got involve with the church, helping out with the PA system. He soon expressed faith and need of God and was baptised in the Sea at Lee-on-the-Solent.

I was delighted as this was what I expected from any one who believed the gospel of Jesus Christ. This was just as it happened to me over 30 years ago.

The News Thursday, June 24, 1999
LEE-ON-THE-SOLENT / Former drug user and thief tells of his new Christian outlook
Baptism at sea marks start of my new life
By Lorna Vicars

A reformed Fareham drug user and thief was baptised in the sea to mark the start of a new life. For years Steve Murray, 21, took drugs, stole cars and burgled houses- but when he became a Christian his life changed. Steve of Hayling Close took the plunge, at the slipway at the Lee-on-the Solent Sailing Club. About 30 friends and relatives watched as an elder, from the Church Steve attends, carried out the baptism. Steve left school six years ago at 15 and became qualified in painting and decorating and carpentry. He spent the next four years when he was not working smoking cannabis and taking ecstasy and amphetamine drugs. He said, “I was getting into trouble with the police – thieving cars and motorbikes”. “When I was not working I was rebelling. I did not know why I carried on doing it. I felt comfortable doing it in a way.

Steve Murray



Steve Murray baptised in the sea

by Rev Peter Jacobs of the Christian Gospel Church
I used to hang about with people who wanted bits fro their houses and it started of with me shop-lifting and petty things. Then people needed cars, and I went on doing it myself because I wanted the stuff.

“I wanted to change but I felt there was no way out”.

Steve remembered the first time he prayed two years ago when he was told his then girlfriend Tyrone Finlayson might die giving birth to their daughter Rhiannon.

He said, “I was surprised to find myself praying and they both made it through”.

“It has gone from there”.

Steve became a Christian and has been going to the Christian Gospel Church, which meets in the Hilton National Portsmouth hotel, in Farlington.

He chose to be baptised in the sea following the example of John the Baptist in the bible.

After months of being unemployed Steve is now working as a Bar Steward at the Forte Post House Hotel in Titchfield.

He said,” It is not like my life has stopped. I still go out and drink and have a good laugh – I just go to church every Sunday”.

“It is like an emptiness has been filled and it gives me something to aim for and I have got someone there. I pray and hope every thing to be all right.

“I see a happy future”.

The very next week he got a job as a barman at the Post House Forte, Segensworth and shortly after that he was able to see his own daughter for the first time in months. I gave him my wedding suit as a baptism gift as he needed a suit of cloths.

I took no notice of those people who began to give me evil reports of his past behaviour believing he was a new man in Christ. Unfortunately I became concerned at his continued heavy drinking and gambling and also his miss treatment of girls. I prayed for him and so did our church. I had another young lodger and they both generated a lot of loud noise from their music and the neighbours complained. Later my daughter’s bicycle was stolen and I had to sort things out so I gave my other lodger, called Dan, notice to leave. He soon complained to me that I had given Steve special treatment over him and he felt this was because he had been baptised.

It was soon after this, whilst Steve was helping at

the church one Sunday morning, that the collection money (£400) was taken, and shortly after this my motorbike, that I had just purchased, was stolen. It was a 250 cc Honda Super Dream. It was returned however with damaged front forks, a broken lock and missing wing mirrors. It was strange that Steve had asked to ride it the day before and assured me he had a full drivers license to drive it. Steve, Dan and Steve’s friend, denied any knowledge of the bikes disappearance and it return.

The Bad Boys



Steve Murray and Dan Bullimore

They say they did not take my Motorbike

I then got a call from Steve’s boss, at the Post House, to say he had not been to work and he now no longer had a job. It was after Steve told me he was going back on housing benefit, as he was not working sufficient hours, that I gave him notice to leave because he was now lying to me.

I received a call on the 27th July 1999, from the cheque-cashing bureau in Fareham, regarding a cheque, apparently issued to Steve Murray, which was not honoured, for £220, so I was advised to go to the police. When reporting this to the police it turned out that Dan also had drawn £100 from my account along with a further Nationwide withdrawal of £380.

Even after this when Steve and Dan had gone I had things stolen from my house. What really got me upset was when my Fender Strata 1983, American Stratocaster, was stolen form my house along with my 8 track digital recorder. The police recovered the Guitar from Steve Murray. When I reported the story to the local News it was reported in the Paper. The only real problem resulting from this was the fact that the senior man at our church had a go at me and

Chapter 38
was not very happy. He seemed very concerned about the name of the church but showed no concern for the fact that Steve Murray had robbed me and taken advantage of me seeking to help him. I felt that since the scripture mentioned the good and bad events such as the bad conduct of Judas, then I felt it quite OK for the world to know Steve Murray’s conduct.

Elly’s Go Kart Nearly Losses Her Ear

During this time I tried to manage as best as I could and took Elly and her friends out for a ride on our Go Kart. Steve Murray had told me had had repaired the breaks and the Kart was now in good order. The trouble was the breaks failed and Elly drove a full speed down Tanners Lane but could not stop and she went straight into the ditch,

The News, Tuesday, May 25 1999

By Neil Durham



Elly and the Go Kart

Rock and Real Music

Rock music a cure or cause of manic highs and lows

I found that making music helped relieve my

stress and fears and so I decided to record and release the song that I had written for Nurse Ratchet. I had practised this song, on my guitar, and sang it at home for weeks. And then one night, when listening to a group called “The Shack” at Murphy’s Bar, in Southampton. I asked if I could play and my song at there gig informing them that I was Dave Clarke from the 60’s. The song went down very well and as a result it was agree I should perform again at the Wyvern at Lee-On-The Solent. Here is the news article about the event.

The News MUSIC / Lecturer plans to release self-penned single (19th December 1999)

Electronics’ teacher is sparking interest in pop

By Richard Hargreaves

The News

He almost shares the same name as a 1960’s pop legend and Fareham College Lecturer hopes to follow him in to the charts.

By day the 50-year old teaches electronics but hopes that will take a back seat in 2000 as he prepares to his release single.

Dave Clarke At The Wyvern



Dave at the Wyvern

When the song came into his head, the guitarist decided it was too good to be forgotten about and felt it just had to be recorded.

Dave, of Hayling Close, turned a pub into a recording studio as he set down the disc “Can You Remember”, a song he believes is a sure fire hit.

After toying with the idea of sending the song to Paul Mccartney he decided to record it himself with four friends and students from Fareham College as a 1999 Dave Clarke Five.

The Wyvern pub, at Lee-on-the-solent, provided the setting and its regulars the audience, as Can You Remember was captured for the first time with Local Duo The Shack.

“I believe it is a good song and worth recording” said Dave. “I wrote the song for my wife.” Every body I know and have been playing it too thinks its really good. It has gone down really well.

Dave of Hayling Close, Fareham, following The Shack around for the past couple of months, bringing an entourage with him and some times joining the band.

And his name has lead to a few people thinking he is the real Dave Clark, whose band the Dave Clark Five had hits more than 30 years ago with songs such as Bits and Pieces and Catch Us If You Can.

“Because it has been so long since his band was around you can get away with it”, Dave added.

The true 1960’s pop star doesn’t have an e on the end of his surname- and according to The Shack probably is a bit more tuneful.

But they were impressed by the lecturer’s charismatic stage performance whipping up the crowd.

For the lead singer Ian Hamilton Friday’s recording was his first live performance of the song he, Dave and friends have practiced for weeks. “It is a very catchy song and I like to think it will be successful. Recording it is a bit of a step. Dave is always going on about Dave Clark,” he added.

To keep up the pop star image, Dave arrived at the Common Barn Lane Pub for last night’s event, in a limousine (Post script- It was a Hurst) accompanied by screaming groupies- who was students from Fareham College

Dave now hopes to tweak the master copy of the recording into something, which could be released shortly as a single, although he says the song is a one-off and not a career move.

I later sang this song in a beat the band completion at Oliver’s Bar in Gosport and the Contented Pig in

Portsmouth and finally entered the song into X factor. One day I am sure it will be a hit.

I am taken to the Police Station

After this event I took Ely and her friends home. I was dressed in my Petty Officers Naval uniform. When we reached Stubbington Ely was feeling ill and wanted me tom stop and so we did only to attract the attention a police car. Sure enough I was questioned and breathalysed and as a result taken to Police station in the police vehicle in order to be checked out. When I arrived at Fareham Police Station there was Alan and others who too had been picked up on suspicion of driving offences. The Police assumed I was a naval officer and suggested I wait at the end of the queue to be tested for excessive alcohol in my blood and by the time I was checked I was OK and allowed to go.


A Christmas card for Miss Bulled

I was alone that Christmas December 1999) but hat did not deter me and I decided to invite my children’s headmistress, Miss Bulled of Henry Cort School, to our Christmas celebration, to our church in Farlington. So to kill two birds with one stone, so to speech, I designed a Christmas card, with pictures of all my children on the front cover and sent it to her. I simple wrote:


We wish you all a
Meaningful Christmas and
A new birth for the New Year
St. John 3. 5-7.

David Clarke, children and friends are inviting you to our Christmas Celebration at The Hilton International, Farlington.

The Family



Grandad



Grandma

Family Continued



Elly, Esther, Dad,
David, Isaac



Rebekah and Daddy

Needless to say when my children found out I had written like this to their headmistress they were so very embarrassed and haven’t go over it to this day. Any way Miss Bullhead was rather pleased to receive the card and wrote to me to thank for the invite. So it couldn’t have been that bad.

Rupert Bear helps David

form a band to help David’s dream come true

During this time of making music, my mind was very active and learning new things. I had just learned how to scan colour pictures into a computer and print in colour. I was armed with this skill and I put together a storybook using Rupert bear cartoons to illustrate and express my wish and desire to sing my song to Silver Girl on Christmas Day. I put this together and sent it along with the music CD disc to my daughter that Christmas of 2000. Go to our website to read and listen to the story.

It took me a year how ever do devise a means of getting Silver Girl to hear my song,

This is what I did

I wrote a story using Rupert Bear pictures to form a book, which tells of how Rupert Bear helped David to form a Rock Band, to sing his song. Example:



Rupert is a lovely Bear he’s always kind and always fair



When David was a little boy he told his dream to Rupert Bear

The whole story tells how Rupert Bear got together students from David’s classes at Fareham College to form a band. The song was sung and recorded on a

CD and sent to his daughter, along with the story to be read and herd on Christmas Day, December 2000 and sent to his daughter

Desperate Measures Rock Band

Following this event I took interest in my student interests. They had formed a rock band called “Desperate Measures” and wanted help in promoting them selves and getting books for musical gigs. They were very happy for me to manage them and do all the promotions. I am sure that this new interest was driven as a result of a reaction to the problems I was facing in my marriage and as a result I created a series of deliberate high moods, in my fight against my depression.

I came up with an idea to create publicity for the band. One member was to live in a coffin for a week and be carried each day, to various eating-places in Fareham to be feed free meals for 7 days. They would also enter the Beat The Band Competition, held at Oliver’s Bar, in Gosport, on the 5th May 2000.

I Build The Coffin

It was agreed and I began to make all the necessary arrangement and entered the Band for the competition. I built the coffin at Fareham College and painted it black and wrote on the side the advertised event. Then drove around Fareham and district with the coffin tied to the roof of my yellow Ford Fiesta.

My Ford Fiesta



Coffin on the roof of my Fiesta

However news of these events brought so much publicity that the member of the band (Mark Rogers) who was to sleep in the coffin had second thoughts about being involved. He “bottled out” saying he might get his Job Seekers allowance and housing Benefit stopped if he was not available for work. So

the band cancelled the planned event. My response to this was to recruit others to form the band so I took the coffin to Fareham College and stood it in the main hall at the beginning of the day and stopped the first likely lad to pose in the coffin. It turned out he was a guitar player called Gavin fro Portchester He was chosen to play the lead in our new band Dave Clarke and the resurrection, from the 60’s.

Mark Rogers



Mark Rogers He Bottled Out
Gavin Marks Replacement



Gavin Our Lead Guitarist, In The Coffin
At Fareham College

I initially got permission from the Principal to put the coffin in the hall but then he had second thoughts and asked me not to do it. However it was too late

the photograph had already been taken. As you can see it was as tough it was made for Gavin. I formed the band with Gavin, Morrison-Govern, Mike Fisher, Vince for Gosport and me singing.

House nearly burnt down

Mark Rogers

It was during this time that Mark Rogers, the main man in the band, and who was to sleep in the coffin for a week was working at home at number 11 Hayling Close. In was away that night whilst I was off seeing to recruit some Ceroc dancers for our music event in Gosport when I got a call to say my house was on fire. I asked Mark was every one safe and was told yes and the fire brigade and policed were there. I was told David and Elly had escaped but apart from the kitchen being burnt out it was all OK. Here is the news article,

Blaze may have been avoided-if batteries had been fitted to detectors
FIREFIGHTERS IN ALARM WARNING



Mark Rogers in our burnt out kitchen

I realised there was nothing to gain by rushing home so stayed the rest of the evening and asked the Cerock dancers to see if they could dance to my song, “Can your Remember”, which I had recorded on a Sony mini disk player.

Coffin Stolen

During the run up to the week Esther my eldest daughter wanted to borrow my Fiesta and I agreed provided she drove it with the coffin on the roof. I am not sure, as I can’t remember, if she did drive the car but the following day the coffin had been stolen so I reported the matter to the police. Of course the matter was reported in the news paper.

The band was formed and we performed as planned singing my songs, “Rebekah’s Field”, “My Resurrection” and “Can you remember”. It was a crazy night and the bar was packed and during the last song one of my son’s friends, Morgan, a Bmx’ers from Portsmouth, pored lighter fuel on my trousers and caught light to me. Fortunately the fire was put out by a pint of beer. Needless to say we did not win, as we were probably the worst band at the event but not the dullest.

Morgan Was Canned

For poring lighter fuel in me in the pub I had to cane Morgan for his actions.

We let him off lightly because he did turn up with his BMX bike as I had asked him to tow the coffin down the street to Oliver’s Bar, using his BMX bike along wit his friends from the skate Park in Portsmouth.

Morgan is Caught



And Canned for Catching Fire to Me

The News Tuesday March 24th, May 2000



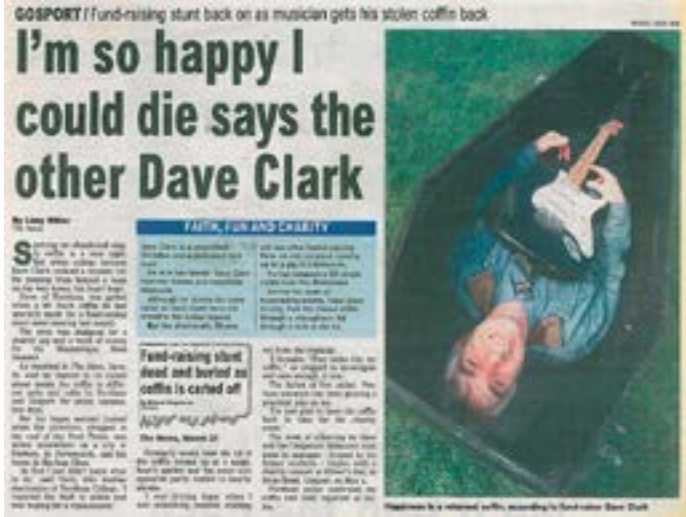
Stolen Coffin

Not To Be Deterred

It was some days later that the coffin was recovered and we were back in business, so to speak. Here is the News Report of it’s finding.

Not to be deterred I recruited another student from college to live in the coffin and he was to be carried by his student friends and fellow musicians, to Weather Spoons, Mac Donald’s, Burger King, Edwin’s and the Oast and Squire to be fed as planned. It was also decided we should put another band and replace “Desperate Measures” by Dave Clarke from the 60’s and the Resurrection.

The News Saturday April 15th 2000



The News Article Saturday April 15th 2000

The Air Balloon Portsmouth



Ironing to Xube music at The Air Balloon

Our next musical event and band promotion was at the Air Balloon in Portsmouth. Xube was playing and we did what was known as an “Installation” there. Mike Fisher on Bass and Dave White on keyboard. It was Drama to Xube music. We were what you might call progressive musicians getting away from the old fashion ways of men and women relationships. We were modern men no longer went to the pub on our own with the boys, leaving our wives alone at home doing house work, but took our wives with us. They could come as well provided they did the ironing in the pub.

A Problem of Stolen Equipment

One problem with dealing and helping many people is that you don’t know whom you can trust. A number of students from Fareham College were interested in our music ventures that I called Rock and Real Music and they came to my home, not only making music but also be involved in video production. One of which video’s we made at Stubbington Cemetery and is now on the web. One such problem was that a lot of valuable equipment was stolen from my house and I heard by the grape vine that two the students, Gavin Sampson and Jodie who had been to my house often had stolen these items and sold it to Ging Roberts. So I made some enquiries and eventually got hold of Ging and asked for his help after writing him a letter of request:

Ging as they call you
Or otherwise, Jamie Roberts, 25 Langston
Court 26th September 2000

I have been trying to contact you for a few weeks now but I can never catch you in, so I am writing this note to you.

Gavin Sampson, from Portchester, sold you some guitars and electrical gear a few weeks ago. That’s fair enough except that the gear he sold you was stolen from my house. Other stuff also went missing (Jodie took it but denies he did so) – a Sharp mini CD recorder and mini discs. There are two Goodman’s radio handsets (trans-receivers) and some valuable CD’s.

I was looking after some of this gear for a friend of mine who was in prison at the time and now he is out he is looking for his stuff.

A few friends of mine have asked around to recover the stuff and we now know where it is and where it went. I met Bruster, in Reading Remand Centre last Wednesday and he informed me Gavin Sampson also sold some of the stuff at the Cash Exchange, in North End.

I have given Jodie and Gavin Sampson plenty of to recover and return the stuff but they seem to think we will forget about it. A few friend of mine know you- Rob White (now Deceased) Frazer, Wesley and others who say you are OK and will help me recover the stuff.

More Naughty Boys



Gavin Samson



Jodie

I have told Samson and Jodie we don’t wish to involve the police, so as not to get them a criminal record and am not interested in who else was involved but we want our stuff back.

They have the following choices:

- 1 Return the stuff (anonymously) – if need be- like some has already re-appeared.

- 2 Attend a “House Court” at number 11 Hayling Close.
- 3 A normal criminal court if the police are Involved.

I have made known that I am not into breaking fingers or knee-capping or shot gun reprisals, as there are other ways to deal with this kind of matter.

I would value you help in helping me recover the items of stuff that you know about.

Dave Clarke,
On behalf or Mark Rogers.

After this Ging and I had a meeting and I gave him £100, which he had paid for our goods, and he said he would get back what he could. How ever I had to chase things up as trouble began to brew. Here my note to Ging.

Ging
4th October 2000

Urgent

How are things with the recovery of the stuff? Unfortunately things seem to be getting a little bit out of hand, as Jodie has got his nose broken on Tuesday.

Apparently Elly’s friend Wesley was not happy with my stuff being taken and took it upon himself to act on his own (I do not approve) and I told him we have the matter sorted but breaking noses or any sort of violence will not help.

As result Jodie informed the College nurse and as a result Wesley was expelled fro College today. I feel unless these items are recovered there may be some serious violence that could take place. All of which, I wish to avoid.

Please call me with some good news.
David Clarke

Goods Recovered

Thankfully most of the goods were returned and Ging became a friend and later wanted to help with the work I wanted to do, in helping people to stay off drugs. I learned later that unfortunately for him he was a heroine Addict and sadly died a few years later. How ever before his death we made a video together about drug addiction and he wanted to use it to warn other not to get involved. The video shows him preparing the heroine and the needle and injecting himself. He described his experience and he wanted to help with the project of help and warning people to stay off drugs etc. I had already made a video regarding the

drug problem, in Stubbington and had sent it to the Police, The News, Schools in Stubbington and Prince Charles and Ging wanted to help.

Ging Dies

I was later informed of Ging’s sad death and replied to a request on YouTube about information about Ging. I posted part of Ging’ video on Youtube. I wasn’t long however that Ging’s relatives responded with fierce opposition so I removed it at their request. It was pointed out that I had spelt the title of Prince Charles wrong. Instead of HRH Prince of Wales I had written HRH Prince of Whales- to which Ging’s father took exception too.

Xube Rock music to everything

Xube music as the brainchild of Mike Fisher, on of my former students and David White both from Gosport. Mike had played bass on my song “Can you remember”, and as a result I began to promote their music.

David is the manager of a Rock band called Xube
Duncan Tickler Xube Artist

- Spectacular light show, Great music. Xube Art, party atmosphere.
- Xube can tailor a performance fit for any occasion.
- Xube are primarily a duo who have managed to mix musical styles

Combining them into infectious rhythmic dance grooves.

- The Xube concept has been purposely designed to offer a refreshing

Different alternative to what is normally expected.

- Xube cause intrigue wherever they perform and instantly capture and hold the interest of any audience.



Xube Light Show

Duncan Tickler Xube Artist



Mike Fisher and David White

Watch out for:

- 1.0 Xube Drama 2.0 Xube Rock
- 3.0 Xube Therapy 4.0 Tube Marriage
- 5.0 Xube Birth 6.0 Xube Art

In fact Xube Music to anything.

Xube Rock Art Music



To be part of this Xube phenomenon
call: Mike Fisher on 02392 786294

An example of Xube art was where our artist’s performed their work at The Stables in Gosport. Two of Fareham students were models and for the sake of modesty I insisted the girls each wore a body stocking while they were painted as Xube music was played.

Dug Hammond At The Stables



Duggy Hammond at the Stables in Gosport
With our Xube Models

Xube Art



Jim Gold Xube’s Resident artist

Xube Body Painting



Xube Models



Xube Music To Give Birth Too

Sam Ready To Give Birth



These are the first ladies to give birth to Xube babies

Should I pay Council Tax?

Towards the end of the year 2000 the Council Tax office wrote to me wanting me to pay extra council tax as it had been reported that I had someone living in my caravan which was parked on my front drive. Here is my letter of reply to them.

The letter to Council Tax Manager Fareham Borough Council

19th December 2000

Dear Sir or Madam,

Re: Council Tax 440189724 your letters 11th December and 28th September

In response to your second letter regarding he above (Council Tax for someone living in a caravan) I have in fact already been asked about this before and I have had a visit from Mr Cooper from Building Control etc.

It appears to me that I have been a victim of a prolonged campaign, by these spurious allegations by neighbours. Complaints have been made in the past including the following:

- Persons sleeping in a tent
- Allowing animals to copulate in the garden
- Allowing children to use bad language in the Street
- Parking on the pavement (the complainant failed to persuade a police constable to issue a parking ticket)

- Overcrowding
- Storing gas cylinders
- Running an electrical repair business
- Running a house or occupying a house in multiple Occupation
- Generating loud music
- Connecting up a gas supply

This allegation is just another to add to the list with no truth in it. It is alleged I allow a Persons or students from Fareham College to live in my caravan. Such an accusation I have denied already in the past. Except for the fact that my children sleep in the caravan during the summer holidays (occasionally).

My daughter has also suffered from anonymous, abusive phone calls, from a neighbour. No one has ever spoken to me personally about any such problems except for the noise and I have dealt with that immediately. I am not the only person to have had this type of problem with the neighbour’s.

Now Regards The Caravan

As I understand things, a person would not be allowed to reside in a caravan unless Building Control allows it. If this was allowed then the Council would be due whether they lived there or not. I already stated no one is living in my caravan. However allow my tongue in check reply.

It has been reported to me that the following picture was taken of an occupant in the caravan and it is believed it escaped from the animal rescue centre in Stubbington. It looks rather dangerous to me and I don’t think it has the means to pay the Council any Tax. I dare not ask it.



The occupant of the caravan
11 Hayling Close PO14 3AE

Yours Sincerely
David Clarke

Merry Christmas and Happy New Year. We will do our best to keep the peace.

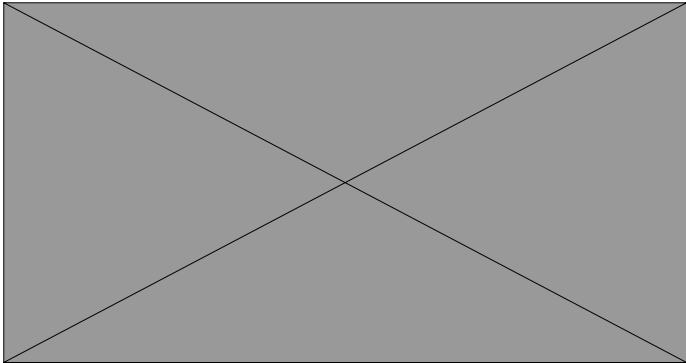
38 Brothers Arrest The Philippines

In April 1995 during my lunch period whilst teaching at Fareham College where I had been working at a lecture teaching Electronics since 1988 my technician, Allan Atcheson, was watching the news on ITN television and the headlines were about a certain Michael John Clarke, a travel agent from Eastbourne. It was my brother he had been arrested in the Philippines on a serious charge and I was shocked at what I heard. This was now published as International news and as a result of crimes he was to be sentenced to a term of 16 years, to be served in Asia’s largest Prison in the Far East, New Bilibid Prison, Muntinlupa City, Philippines.

Michael Unaffected By My Conversion

Michael had been unaffected by my change of life and conversion and had lived a flamboyant life style for many years, paying no regard to God. How ever he had attended the meeting, that I told you about earlier in this book, at **Bierton chapel, on 5th June 1983, where I went fishing for men.** This was were I related my testimony as to the Lords dealing with me and I recall Michael making light of the matters after that meeting with all my family there.

Michael’s Arrest



[Click to view the Playlist](#)

Great Concern

This caused me great concern and knew not what to do. So we communicated by letter an I learned about his plight.

Michael’s Call For Help

Michael had written to me, from the jail in the Philippines, in 1998 asking me to help him and I could tell from his first letter he was in a very bad

way. He told me of another Englishman, Suny Wilson, who had been “set up” for a crime he did not do and was sentenced to death in 1996. Michael use to visit him on Death Row and spend time together. The Philippine Supreme Court acquitted Suny Wilson, on the 19th December 1999 through the help of Alan C. Atkins and Errol Wilkinson and he had given Michael a small paperback entitled “Mere Christianity” by CS Lewis on his release. Michael read this book and was later convinced that Jesus was the Christ the Son of the living God.

Michael’s letter indicating a true change of mind and heart

Dear David,
7th May 1999

With regards to me writing my life story etc, for you to include in your book! Please David forgive me but I am so screwed up, I just could not handle it right now. It takes me all my strength to just write this letter to you...

I am so very pleased that you are concerned for me and that you include me in your prayers and your fellow Christians. I do believe in God and Jesus Christ but even though I pray and ask him to please forgive me, for all my sins, and to help me to be a better person and to take over the rest of my life on earth and to lead me into heaven - I do not want to go to hell because I know that what I am suffering now is nothing to the perpetual hell which would await me after physical death on earth. My faith is not strong enough and I am so very, very, confused. Even if I get out of here what am I going to do with the rest of my life. I am looking very old, skinny, withdrawn. I have not smiled in almost 4 years. Where am I going to live? How can I earn a living in my condition?

Oh, David I am so very afraid of the future and it hurts me so much to even think about it. I have become old before my time and all I can see is loneliness in some dingy rented room and no chance of ever finding some one (a lady) to love and share things with. Oh, David what am I going to do?

The only thing that stops me thinking about suicide is that hell will be waiting for me and the torment there will be a million times worse. Will I ever smile again? Will I ever love again? Will any one love me again? Is it possible to be happy again? I do not have any reason to live and that is so very frightening. Oh, David I know you have your problems that may be

greater than mine and to be honest I do not know how you cope. How do you manage to keep working and keep your home going, the loss of you wife must be absolutely unbearable? May be you can suggest how I tackle my problems of the future, for me there simply is no light at the end of the tunnel.

When I leave here I don’t even have a pair of shoes. I will have to start all over again but the question is how do I start all over again? I simply have no will to live and I just could not cope with living on my own as I know I would not be able to fend for my self. To think of buying a property is really out of the question. What do I do? What do I do?

Another reason why I cannot think of writing my life story is because I am truly ashamed of many of the things I have done and I don’t really want to broadcast my evil past for every one to read. I have confessed to the Lord and I just hope He will forgive me.

You asked me how I felt about you becoming a Christian 30 years ago. Well I was quite proud of you but felt you were a little over the top but I never mocked you in any way. My heart broke with Karen Mead and the collapse of Tudor Charm and my divorce I will expand on that some other time so please David not at the moment, you may have to wait until I am released.

At the moment I am taking each day at a time and I keep praying that I will be acquitted of this horrible conviction, which I hope will give me added strength to face the future. I am sorry my letter is so depressing, all I can do is pray to out the Lord for strength and guidance.

Once again David thank you again for not forsaking me and I am sure you will be always there to give me support.

Please give all my love to the Children Regards
Michael.

I write my life story

It was during my long and lonely separation that I felt able and compelled to write my life story, which resulted in my second book, “Converted on LSD Trip”. This penned my life story and how I first became a Christian, through a very bad experience on an LSD trip and this was published on 11th February 2001. How ever whilst writing the story I received the news of Michael’s conversion and included some of his story in my book. The publication of my book was

not to every ones liking.

One year on and a change takes place

Just after one year I noticed a remarkable change in Michael’s outlook and his state of mind. It was all for the better. I gradually felt able to read and digest the 29

National Bureau of Investigation Report (NBI), which clearly clears Michael of charges made against him. This record goes on to a recommendation that Fr. Shay Cullen, Michael’s Complainant, be deported on the grounds of him being and undesirable alien in the Philippines. (See report appendix 01)

Michaels Letter

Dear David,

July 3rd 2000

Just a few lines wishing every thing are OK With you and you are being to sort out how you will be able to see your daughter on mutual terms.

There is no movement with regards to my case with the Board of Pardon and Parole because as of today my prison records have not been sent from the prison document section to the Board. Every thing moves so slowly it really drives me crazy.

I am still reading a lot of Christian books. The one I am reading now is “Joy Unspeakable” by Dr. Martin Lloyd Jones. It is all about the Holy Spirit and I believe that baptism of the Holy Spirit is some thing distinct and does not always, as some people think happen automatically at conversion. The Holy Spirit is within every believer at conversion YES but the baptism can come at any time when Jesus Christ chooses to out pour it upon us. And if us Christian’s are not aware of this and do not seek this ultimate experience I believe they are quenching the Holy Spirit, by not praying for it, and not just for them selves but for the whole Christian Church. “Revival”.

Etc.

Your are always in my prayers Michael.

News of Michael’s conversion

I got news of my brothers own conversion from crime to Christ, whilst in the Jail in the Philippines.

He had written to me telling me of his reading after C.S. Lewis’s book, “Mere Christianity” and as a result he was convinced that Jesus was the Christ the son of the living God.

I Publish Converted On Lsd Trip

I then felt led to publish our story in “Converted

on LSD Trip” and to go on a mission of help to my brother in the Philippines. It was a direct result the news of Michael conversion from crime to Christ that I felt compelled to finish my story. I had always since my conversion felt compelled to tell the world of what the lord had done for me and I had kept diary notes since the 16th January 1970 to do so. After its publication its title was, “**Converted on LSD Trip**”, which when published the Bucks Herald newspaper told the story yet again. As a result of that Gordon Smith contacted me after 30 years of not seeing him and we there and then over the telephone decided to go and bring help and assistance to my brother in the Philippines.

We took 8 copies of my book to the Philippines on our first mission be circulated in the Prison and to be given certain persons including the Director of the Prison and the President herself Gloria Macapagal Arroyo.

Cast Net The Other Side Of The Ship.

I had a strong conviction that my story could be of great help to others and although I had tried to tell it in England a scriptural verse pressed hard on my conscience it was, “And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. John 21 v 6. And they were astonished at the draft of fishes they had taken. The sense I gathered was that for years I had toiled to fish in my home country now I was to cast the net on the other side of the world- Philippines was where we were headed.

Michael wrote to me again to me in 2000 with news of his conversion to Christianity and of him being baptised, in a 45 gallon oil drum in New Bilibid Prison, by Lucas Dangatan, a former inmate, who was now a Religious Volunteer (RVO) working in New Bilibid Prison and Pastor of the New Bilibid Prison Theological Institute (NBPTI) in the prison. I finally believed Michael was telling the truth about his conviction. That he too had been “set up” for a crime he did not commit. This was clear to me after reading the National Bureau of Investigation (NBI) report, written by the Bureau in 1995. See Appendix “Trojan Warriors” to read the report. This report was brought to me by Suny Wilson, who himself had been wrongly convicted on a charge of rape. He called me on the telephone, on the 25th December 1999, soon

Chapter 38

BROTHERS ARREST THE PHILIPPINES

157

after he returned to England, to introduce himself and he then came to see me with news of Michael and to give me the NBI report.

Michael Is Baptized In The Prison

As I was putting the final touches to the first edition of Converted on LSD Trip, I felt compelled to include Michael’s story (this is a STOP PRESS story) and must be told by Michael himself but in his letters to me when, I asked him to write his side of the story to compliment, “Converted on LSD Trip” he wrote in May 1999, “with regards to me writing my life story etc. For you to include in your book! Please David forgive me but I am so screwed up I just could not handle it right now it takes all my strength just to write this letter to you”. Our Church sent him a new leather bound bible and a couple of tapes and some friend wrote to him. He said also he was very pleased my fellow Christians were praying for him and were concerned about him. He expressed he was so very low and did believe in God and had asked forgiveness for all his sins and trusted in him. He wonders could any one ever love him and would he ever smile again or could he ever be happy again. Another reason why he could not think to write his story was because he said “I am truly ashamed of many things I have done and really did not wish to broadcast my evil past to every one at that time”. He had confessed to the Lord and just hoped he would be forgiven.

In July 2000 Michael wrote he was reading Christian books and at that present time was reading, “Joy Unspeakable” by Dr Martin Lloyd -Jones. I was very encouraged and soon realised he had become a Christian when he expressed his wish to work in full time Christian ministry.

It became very apparent to me and to others that God had demonstrated His goodness to another undeserving sinner. Michael John Clarke. This was indeed good news to say the least. Armed with this good news and my intentions, I told my story to the religious correspondent at The News Portsmouth, Lizzy Millar.

THE NEWS Saturday August 12th 2000

ON THE left is Dave Clarke - college lecturer and committed Christian. On the right is his brother Michael - currently languishing in a prison cell in the Philippines.

The New Article



The News Saturday, August 12, 2000

Dave spends much of his spare time trying to help young people turn away from a life of crime. Now he is on his most important mission yet - trying to save his brother’s soul.

Dave converted to Christianity almost 30 years ago, after sharing a life of crime with his brother in their youth. But his brother Michael went further off the rails and is now in a jail in the Philippines.

Dave, 52, of Hayling Close said, regular letters from his brother showed he was sick of his lifelong criminal past, and was thinking of becoming a Christian. He said: ‘Michael wrote to me saying he was despairing and suicidal and asked me about my faith. ‘I’ve been praying hard for him and believe he has now come to know the Lord as his personal saviour. I think he is listening to what I write.

Both brothers were notorious criminals in Buckinghamshire where they lived in the 1960’s. They were jailed for malicious wounding, which involved shooting a woman in the face with an air weapon at Margate.

Dave said: “When I came out I knew everything there was to know about crime. It was a good school”.

“I was determined to have the best of everything and went about it with determination. “I was riding

on my brother's reputation. I thought he was cool, but others may not have done so. I set up a garage business for stolen cars.'

Dave went to Borstal for 12 months while his brother, who denied the charge, went to Maidstone prison for two years.

Father-of-five Dave went straight after converting to Christianity in 1970. He moved to Fareham where he began teaching electronics at the town's college, and became involved with the Christian Gospel Church.

His brother went on the run after being given home leave from prison but was recaptured and served his full sentence.

Michael is now four years into a 16-year jail sentence in prison in the Philippines for promoting child sex tourism. This crime he has always denied.

MICHAEL Clarke discovered the Philippines and its cheap sex business in 1995 when he set himself up as a tour operator.

He placed an advertisement under the name of Paradise Express in Exchange and Mart and produced crude brochure describing a 12-night holiday as the dirty dozen and with Photos of bikini clad woman as well as giving details on how to find a Filipino wife.

Michael Clarke, who is divorced with a daughter, had been arrested: for agreeing that under age prostitutes could be procured, after he had been captured on a hidden camera. He is appealing against the conviction as an Irish priest set him up.

Dave said he hoped his brother would now find God and give up crime.

He added "I regret the hurt and pain I caused, but I realize I had to go through what I have because when I talk to kids to keep them out of trouble I have credibility.

Lizzy Millar The News
12th August 2001.

Our local news reporter Liz Millar of The News wrote to Michael, via e mail and asked the following questions "as follows:

Liz also wrote these questions for Michael in 28th Aug 2000

Questions for Michael Clarke

1) How do you plan to get out of prison?

Answer - Conditional Pardon by way of voluntary deportation

2) How can we be sure you've changed your ways?

Answer - It is my Lord Jesus Christ that has convicted me of all my Sins, but regards to the crime I was convicted for, which I will always maintain my innocence as Fr. Shay invented this crime.

Cullen who is an Irish Priest and he himself has been charged with Rape and a warrant is now out for his arrest with NO BAIL granted. The Victim is a 7-year-old girl.

Several foreigners have become a victim of Fr. Cullen and The Modus Operandi of him is now under investigation by the Secretary of Justice whom hopefully in the long run will vindicate me completely from this present conviction.

The fact that I am now a true Christian and my FAITH will safe guard me from the temptations of the Devil. It is the same FAITH that assures me of eternal life. AMEN.

I encourage Michael to be baptized

I wrote to Michael in order to encouraged him and said he must now be baptised (Dipped) and I gave him the words as he had expressed into what name or on who's authority should he be baptised? I said In the name of Jesus (his authority) and get immersed water, in the name of Father, Son and Holy Ghost (Spirit). I said he must get one of the inmates who was a Christian to dip him or one of the Christian works that he knew.

These he did and on the 16th September Michael was baptised, as a Christian, in a make shift 45-gallon oil drum.

Michael is baptised 16th September 2000.

Philippines

To: "David Clarke" <david@dclarke49.fsnet.co.uk>

Baptism in New Bilibid Prison



Michael Baptized in New Bilibid Prison

John Sawyers funeral

At that time John Sawyer, one of my students died. He was a diabetic and lived alone at 6 Ranson Close, Titchfield.

The police rang me one morning asking if I knew John Sawyer. I explained I was his course tutor at Fareham College and he was one of my student doing a City and Guilds course in Electronics Servicing.

The policeman explained John was found dead in his home at Titchfield and he had no relatives to contact and my telephone number was the only contact they found in John's house.

I had known John, as a student at College, for about two years and had visited him at his home. He had shared with me about his life and his struggles with Fareham Borough Council about his workshop that they stopped him building.

He was quite a well-liked character amongst the staff at Fareham College. He loves his wife, who had died a few years previously, and so he returned to college doing mechanical engineering and electronics as a hobby. He was a mechanic and engineer having all kinds of good electronic and mechanical equipment.

Since John had no relatives we decided at college to make arrangements for his own departure. It was muted at first we hire a proper vicar to conduct the funeral. It was then I stepped in and said I would be pleased to conduct his funeral.

Several students and staff came to his funeral including Geoff Whitefield our Head of School and our Health and safety officer Marilyn Dufour.

Our technicians and staff were his coffin bearers whilst I spoke a few relevant words about John and his life. I related that Jesus at the tomb of Lazarus wept. It was a natural thing to feel and express grief. I said had John been a believer he would have gone to be with Christ but he had made no profession of faith, as far as any one knew. So I couldn't say any more.

It was a sorrowful occasion but John had a respectful funeral and he left us with good memories of him self.

It was commented after the funeral that his coffin was so heavy they suggested John had taken with him his tool kit.

It was also said I made a better preacher than a lecturer; little did they know that that was my real calling.

It can be said that I cater for all my students' needs

Subject: My visit today to Michael

Date: Tue, 19 Sep 2000 16:37:09 +0800

He sends you this reply.

I was baptised "by immersion" on Sept. 16th 2000 a photo, the photo is now being developed.

Your suggested words were used even before I received your views. YES please put on the web sites the NBI report. But do not give any details whatsoever as to my past criminal record this is personal so just say in general terms that over the years he did many things that were wrong including breaking the criminal law. This also concerns any newspaper stories about me. NO DETAILS only general.

Regards to Liz Miller's question asking, "what does he expect the new story will do to help him".

ANSWER

To expose the truth about the fabricated case against me brought about by Fr. Shay Cullen. But I believe that God will use this situation to expose the works of Satan and in doing so I have surrendered myself to the Lord and have devoted the rest of my life to saving other lost souls.

I have forgiven Fr. Shay Cullen for his evil acts and hope he too confesses his sins to the lord as well as publicity otherwise I know that he is not a Christian and the Lord will punish him in his own way.

Ps Michael was first imprisoned June 7th 1995 - date of sentence Oct 11th 1996 to date 5 years 4 months in Prison

The Baptism Group in the Prison



Michael's Baptism Group

(Pastor Lucas- bottom centre)

I was over the moon with delight and I wrote and told him this was the way forward and we will go on together with Gods help and strength get him clear or acquittal and out of prison.

although I have not yet been a mid wife. Nor have I conducted a marriage.

My redundancy at Fareham College

It was in March 2001 that I was given 6 months notice my compulsory redundancy. I had taught electronics at Fareham College since September 1988, however student numbers had declined over the years and the college had decided to no longer offer the courses I had taught. I felt very insecure and was not sure about the future on all fronts. With this bad news and sense of despair I tried to speak to my estranged wife. I was concerned about our future and I had the need to talk about our finances but she state that she wanted nothing to do with my house, my money, or anything and wanted nothing do with my brother, as she stated he was a paedophile.

I felt so alone and realised I had to look after my own interests and my brother. I knew if I had no income she would not get any money from me for maintenance for my daughter and have to rely on other sources. And so since she wanted nothing to do with my concerned I felt there was no reason for me to stay in the U.K when I could be in the Philippines, giving assistance to my brother who needed me.

This was the moving cause and reason of our first mission to the Philippines and enabled me to make the decision to go. My wife would have to see to her life on her own.

Don’t Judge A Book By Its Cover

Fareham College Principal’s response to my book, “Converted on LSD Trip”

The story of “Converted on LSD Trip” was an embarrassment to some people, including the Principal of Fareham College who was my employer. The Principal being Malcolm Charnley. I just could not understand this no one seamed to realize what was happening and it was clear the book was judged by it’s cover. The Principal wrote:

“I do not wish to be associated personally or professionally with a book entitled “Converted on LSD Trip” with it’s over reference to drug taking”. October 2001.

This was presumably because the book had been published whilst I was working at Fareham College. In my true story I mention my work at the College and my turn away from God and so was probably an embarrassment to the College. It was remarked by

some that my story might have been just too much for the College to cope with and that my imminent redundancy from the college was the result. The strange thing was that whilst all this was taking place the College was under considerable pressure from the Health and Safety Executive who were examining it for not dealing correctly with problems of asbestos on its premises.

Fareham College Guilty

The College was later found guily and fined (February 2002) on four counts, a sum of over £23,000, for exposing staff and students to asbestos dust. This however was after I finished work at the college, in August 2001. My redundancy fro Fareham College made it possible for me to complete our Mission to the Philippines.

Portsmouth consultant Psychiatrist approves my book

The irony was that at the same time Dr. Philip Fleming, the consultant psychiatrist of the Kingsway House, the center for Substance Misuse Service, Portsmouth had written a forward to the second edition.

Dear David,

I attach a brief review of your book as requested. As you will see I found your experiences of great interest and I am sure your book will be of help to many.

Philip Fleming



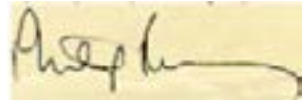
“Converted on LSD Trip”

This book, the personal testament of David Clarke, in in an autobiographical style. It charts his life, which became one of criminality and drug taking though an experience in 1970 of finding God whilst under the influence of LSD. Cynics may say that this was just an effect of drugs, but it is clear that the experience changed his life. Later when in court facing charges he admitted to many other crimes and was fortunate in receiving three years conditional discharge and not a prison sentence.

Since then David has combined his work as a lecturer in electronics with his mission of spreading the word of God. This is a scrupulously honest book recording both the difficulties he has faced as well as the successes in his life since 1970. A continuing

worry is the fat of his brother, currently serving a long prison sentence in a Philippine jail who himself has recently found God.

“This is an inspiring story of a life that has been turned from crime to a positive account and may be of help to others who find them selves directionless and involved in crime and drug misuse”.



Dr. Philip M. Fleming. MA. BA, Bch. FRCPsych. DPM.

Consultant Psychiatrist with special responsibility for drugs and alcohol services. Kingsway House is the base for these services in Portsmouth. May 2001

Knowing these things I felt that middle class morality stank and not all men have faith to see beyond and outward show of righteousness. Some went so far as to say “I must withdraw the book from circulation”. They believed it would do harm and not good.

Gordon Smith Contacts Me

My book had been published and news article appearing the Bucks Herald newspaper, in Aylesbury and as a result Gordon Smith, an old of Michael and contacted me and we renewed acquaintances. It was then we decided we would go together to the Philippines to assist my brother. It was decided we would visit for 3 weeks, as this was the longest time we could visit without a visa.

The Decision To Go To Help Michael

The decision to go and help my brother Michael was made in May, 2001 and was born after a long and bitter conflict with my wife. He needed help my wifewanted me awy from her. We had separated and I had lived separately since November 1998. I did not want this separation and wanted reconciliation. My attempt to work together in a Christian marriage had failed. It was our on-going arguments, over the conduct of the children of my first marriage, and an on going legal battle over my access to me seeing our very young daughter. It became apparent that we were unable to see eye to eye, about anything, and unable to discuss any matter without emotions rising, developing into unreasonable arguments, leaving me feeling total despair.

The stress had driven me to ask for personal of counselling at my work, in order to help me deal

with the sense of hurt, rejection and, loss along with resentful feelings that I was experiencing. This lasted for two years until I was able to handle the conflicts I faced. It had always been my view that it was wrong for my wife and I to live separately and for me to be denied the natural right to be with my very young daughter. I also felt it was her right to be with and see her daddy on a daily basis. I also knew we just could not afford the luxury of two homes. I was living in the house I had purchase before our marriage and my wife and daughter were living in our matrimonial home, which belonged to my wife before we married. I felt, as she was not prepared to be reasonable about all these things and resolve our marriage problems I would have to take the legal route.

A Legal Matter From Now On

I had experienced many months of arguments and dispute, with Nurse Ratchet, which included a long drawn out protracted legal battle over my rights to see my daughter. It was noted by the respondent’s solicitor that I had written over 1000 A4 sheets to which she had to address. The shear volume of my correspondence indicated my concern and wishes to see my daughter. After my petition to the court the judge ordered that my wife would have the responsibility of bring up my daughter and I would have access to see her at certain times, without hindrance or let. How ever even this did not work.

The Child Support agency had eventually, assessed our financial status and set the amount of Child Support I was give her mother. I was thankful for this because although I had given voluntary maintenance to my wife, from 5th November, 1998 to 1st August 1999, Nurse Ratchet refused to apply for a CSA assessment. Nurse Ratchet insisted and refused to cooperate stating neither **she nor my daughter wanted any money from me.**

It was only after she had been advised by her Solicitor, in February 2000, to make the much-needed application to the CSA to assess the amount of maintenance I should pay her. It was this action that resolved the matter. So maintenance was now determined by the CSA, for which I was thankful because otherwise my daughter would either get no money or we would be perpetually engaged in unreasonable arguments about money. She had decided that I should go and it would seem no consideration was given to how this separate life style should be

funded. I certainly could not afford or be prepared to pay the luxury of running two homes. Nurse Ratchet would have to pay for that luxury, which I could not afford.

39 Mission to the Philippines August 2001

Gordon and I left on our mission to the Philippines, in order to bring help and relief to Michael who had organize our mission from within the New Bilibid Prison, along with the help of various Religious Volunteers (RVO) who worked in the prison.

New Bilibid Prison is the largest prison in the Far East and consists of three compounds. The Maximum, Medium and Minimum compounds along with penal farms. At the time of our visit the prison housed over 23,000 inmates with 1200 men on Death Row. Michael was in the Maximum-Security Compound and in that high walled prison were various religious groups that looked forward to our visit as Michael had arranged that we should speak and tell of our religious experiences that I recorded in my book, Converted on LSD Trip.

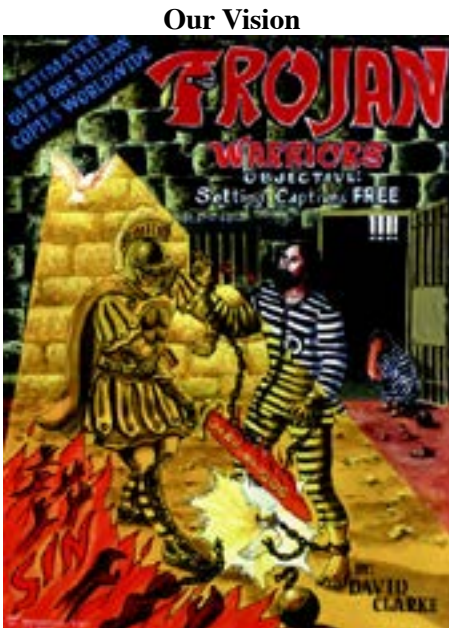
Our invitation to visit the Philippines, on this mission, was by issued by Joseph Kim, a Korean missionary who did volunteer work in the prison and he also arrange for us to visit other prisons and church during our visit.

We also visited other jails, including Angeles City and Barretto District Jail, were Michael was first imprison in 1995.

It was while we were sharing our experiences, to a large group of prisoners in the Maximum compound, that both Michael and I felt it would be good to let some of these prisoners, who had been converted from crime to Christ, to share their testimonies with the free society. On that occasion I requested a hundred men to write their personal testimonies and we would publish them in a book that we would call, “Trojan Warriors”. ISBN 9780953947317.

Trojan Horse International

During the next year Michael, along with Lucas Dangatan, a religious volunteer (RVO) and pastor of the New Bilibid Prison Theological Institute within the prison, worked together to collect and verify these testimonies. I worked here in England and wrote our book, “Trojan Warriors” in which the vision we all shared is recorded and at that time was to be realised.



Trojan Warriors Front Cover

William Poloc Our first Trojan Warrior

In August 2002

William Poloc was released, after serving 18 years in New Bilibid Prison. He was the first of what we hoped would be many inmates to be released, with the support and financial aid of our New Bilibid Teacher Training College.

Williams Poloc’s (Extract from Trojan Warriors) Testimony number 62 in our book Trojan Warriors

Inmate William C. Poloc



Name: William O. Poloc
Age: 47 years old 3rd January 1954
Status: Married 3 children
Prison No: 140226-P
Dormitory: 13-A
Crime: Robbery with Homicide
Sentence: Life Imprisonment
Served: 13 yr. 6 months
Detained: Since 1988

Family: Address: 207 C. Michael St., Lower Engr’s Hill, Baguio City, Philippines 2600

Dear Guys,

Greetings in the sweetest name of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

Hey guys! If you ain’t be doing right now or maybe something’s gonna be fussing you over, just put on your stuff, get rid of those hanky-pankies from your mind and do allow me to drive you into a footing you can be able to size up....”Who you are, what you are, and where you are”.

Guys just do me a little favour by going over these few lines. You know I really mean business. I don’t want making any “tse-tse buret-tse” (exaggerated stories) with you neither I go roaming around the bush because I know in some degrees you’re indeed a spoiled brat like me before. Well. If my A, B, C, would hit you directly below the belt, that’s gonna be a sure sign that I made an impact... No pain, No gain. Right!

OnAugust22nd1989,Iwas sentenced by the court to suffer the penalty of life imprisonment for committing a crime of robbery with homicide. Qualified as and insular prisoner, I was then immediately transferred from Baguio City Jail to the National Bilibid Prison. Maximum Security Compound, Muntinlupa City. The place is a couple of hundreds kilometers away from my home. The legendary hell inhabited by hardened criminals coming from different places of the country. Killings, stabbings and rumbles are common activities and a daily experience caused between gangs before.

My early years in prison were indeed a mess. I could hardly adjust myself with the unusual and unpleasant environment. The climate was too hot for a country boy like me. I felt sick dealing with different people around. People who know no other things but to invent tes-tse buret-tse just to deceive others. Sometimes I became morally inclined when my family comes to visit. After all, I am back again to my abnormal situation. Life in prison for the past eight years was a bitter experience in my life. Until one day that was in June 1995 I happened to attend a fellowship of born again Christians. I just don’t know what prompted me to get assembled with these enthusiastic people. It was my only first time to join worshiping God demonstrated by dancing and clapping of hands. I really felt irritated and thought

to myself that these people had gone all insane. I just wanted to step out of that rumpus place but there was some thing from within that’s gonna be pulling me to stay over. Eventually I tried to relax myself and with curiosity, observe the next event that would take place after the singing. Mean while a man rose from his seat, positioned himself at the pulpit, and confidently delivered his message. I could not understand why at that very moment my attention was focused on the preacher’s message. It was a message of hope, a hope for sinners like you and me. A hope that isn’t temporary a lasting one authenticated by the blood of Jesus Christ. I was deeply moved and had been responsive by the preacher’s message. It was very interesting and encouraging, however, intimidating. In my perception, I sensed that the preacher was emphatically hurling the message to me. But how did he come to know my spiritual needs? Besides it was only the first time we met each other. Nevertheless, whatever the intent of the preacher in delivering his message, I don’t care. I don’t care if it hurts me, being a sinner. I am drawn by his message and like it. I wanted to grasp everything he’s trying to say. Finally, the conclusion of the preacher ended in a simple statement of challenge, which says. “Brothers, true hope can only be experienced through faith in Christ”.

As I lay on my bed in my little room that very night, the message flashed back in my mind. I tried to recapture and meditate everything he said and found out my self that I am one of the worst sinners living against the will of God. And as a result, I deserve the menacing punishment of hell. The glowing presence of the preacher’s massage that morning became real into my mind. I was convinced that through faith in Christ was the only way to elude the consequences of being a sinner.

It was on the evening of June 1995, that I decided to accept Christ in my little room. Dragged by my will and emotion, I cried to God for the forgiveness of my sins. I asked God to give me a new life. The following day I felt like being a new man, I perceived that there was joy, peace and hope stimulating over my whole being. After a couple of months I committed myself to a church and was baptized. I really felt God was working in my life and wanted to equip me with his word. So I enrolled then in a Theological Institute and by the grace of God I was able finish a 4-yr. course Bachelor in Theology. At the same time

I endeavored to be active in every spiritual activity by preaching God’s word to other churches here in prison, evangelism, and sharing God’s word to my co- inmates.

Lots of them were surprised to see the changes that miraculously transpired in my life. And this led some of them to come and accept the Lord as their personal Savior.

People over here call me a doctor. I remember a certain Englishman by the name Michael Clarke. Every time he had a problem he used to consult me asking for a prescription. Of course I have got to give the best spiritual medicines that will heal him. In fact that is the reason why they call me the doctor.

From now on, Muntinlupa the former grave of the living dead became the center of evangelism for Christ. Missionaries and Evangelists from different places thronged the place to preach the Word of God. Consequently lots of my co- inmates arose from their graves (spiritually speaking) they’ve come to accept Christ as their Lord and personal Savior.

Guy’s! Have you considered the questions? Who are you? What you are? Where you are? . The Bible says that we are all sinners, therefore, each and every one of us deserves death (torments in hell) but because of God’s loving-kindness he gave us the antidote in the person of Our Lord Jesus Christ to save us from the impending wrath of God.

Guy’s it is time for you to think it over. You’re in danger; you’re in need of a Savior. Salvation is now! The Bible says that ... do not boast about tomorrow, we do not know that day may bring forth. (Prov. 27.1)

If any one cares to write to me it would be my pleasure to respond. C/o my family home address. September 9th 2001.

Gordon Smith saying good-bye to Dr. William Poloc.

Gordon had just prayed to the Lord that one day he would bless him with a new leg because he is due for release in August 2002 and wants to be a Trojan Warrior Outreach Officer, in the jails in his mountain Province in Baguio City.

William Poloc and Gordon Smith



A Bionic Leg would be a blessing.

Can any one help?

Our Second mission to the Philippines

By October 2002, we had 66 testimonies, of some of the most notorious criminals who had testified to their conversion from crime to Christ. Twenty-two of these men were on **Death Row**, and I had the privilege of putting together this book with their stories written for all to see.

Our book was published and printed and we shipped over 100 copies for each inmate that had submitted their testimony, and we went on our second mission to continue the work we had begun.

William Poloc had returned to Baguio City and commenced a work in the City Jail and Benguet District jail and during my visit I had the privilege of baptizing 22 prisoners in Baguio City Jail and 8 souls in Benguet District Jail.

Before the Cock Crows

During my work in the Philippines, from October 2002 and July 2003, I was able to register our ministry with the Securities Exchange Commission, calling it **Trojan horse International (TULIP) Phils. Incorporated** and we were accepted as a bona fid ministry, which allowed us to work in all the prisons in the Philippines.

During our mission I kept a diary and wrote about the work we were doing. This is to be published in our next book, which tells of the good and bad events that we encountered. Sadly Michael died in New Bilibid Prison in May 2005, before our vision to bring help to

many in the Philippines was realised.

Should I obey God or Man?

I realize that I had considerable opposition and not every one was behind our work but I was not easily moved off course that was because by the fear of the Lord and not man, I chose rather to obey God and not be directed by the wisdom of men that are without faith towards God. I call my readers to look at the results of our mission recorded in this and our other publication to judge, as it is my opinion that Christ has been honoured and God has been glorified. And even though I had made enemies (I don’t understand why), I took encouragement from the commendation that I received from Prince Charles in 2002. This was because on my return to the UK in 2002, I sought to work among young people in our area, to steer them away from crime and drug use. In this work a made a documentary video highlighting the problem of drug use among young people in Stubbington. The video was sent to the schools, police and Prince Charles and it is his response that encouraged me to continue the work we had begun not only in the Philippines but also now in the UK.

A Commendation from Prince Charles

The work that I was engaged in brought encouragement some and caused alarm to others. However I was not totally without support as the Prince of Wales himself was very supportive of the work that I began to do on my return from the Philippines. Here is his letter of encouragement:

From: **The Office of HRH The Prince of Wales**
7th February 2002



Dear Mr. Clarke,

The Prince of Wales has asked me to thank you for your letter of 22nd January in connection with the work, which you and others in you local area are undertaking in relation to young people and drugs.

Your reasons for writing as you did are appreciated and His Royal Highness is grateful to you for taking

the trouble to draw your very worthwhile efforts to his attention.

The Prince of Wales has asked me to send you all his best wishes for the future success of your work.

Yours sincerely,
Mrs. Claudia Holloway

PRESS RELEASE

Reporter Alan Atkins. 11th September 2001
TROJAN HORSE MISSION TO THE PHILIPPINES

4th August- 10th September 2001

Preaching to prisoners including those on “Death Row”, New Bilibid Prison, and Philippines.

By Alan Atkins.

When first learning of the intended visit by self-styled evangelists and former Lecturer, David Clarke, from Fareham, Hampshire, and Gordon Smith from Merely, Nr. Bournemouth, England, to the Philippines, a number of resident foreigners were angry and dismayed. This was not for the fact that the pair wanted to share their experiences of conversion to Christianity that was their business. Rather, it was the deeper motive of purportedly attempting to assist in the early release of David Clark’s brother, Michael Clarke, from the hell-hole that is called New Bilibid Prison, where he had been sentenced to serve 16 years. The angry resident foreigners, all of whom are involved in fighting to obtain justice for many foreigners falsely convicted in a country where the justice system is decidedly faulty to say the least, believed the visit would be detrimental to their own efforts.

Initially, the pair was to be accompanied by Albert Wilson, the Dover resident who had obtained acquittal and release from a death sentence just eighteen months previously. It was believed that certain local vigilante organizations, which had been screaming after his acquittal, would have drawn adverse publicity, which would have hampered the efforts of the locals.

German, Harry Joost, and Britain, Alan Atkins, had dispatched angry missives to David Clarke stating that they both could not see just what good the mission would achieve. Both believed that it would set the

cases of incarcerated foreigner’s back, as living here for many years, they fully understood the Philippine psyche. Vocal criticism by foreigners would lead to the Filipino authorities digging in their heels, just to show whose country it really was.

David Clarke, in particular, had a genuine reason to visit. There is little doubt that his brother, Michael Clark, convicted of running tours for paedophiles, was cleverly encouraged to make a silly, facetious remark while being secretly filmed by a British television company needing sensationalism. The case was gleefully seized upon by the self-styled “paedophile - busting priest”, Father Shay Cullen. Cullen, who has a huge property overlooking Subic Bay, obtains millions from donations to support his children’s home, which, incidentally, only contains between 26 and 36 children at any one time. Michael Clarke is only one of the high profile convictions he has obtained against alleged foreign pedophiles. Each conviction is accompanied by fan-fare overseas, mainly in Germany and Italy, and results in a massive inflow of cash.

David Clarke, learning some of this, had every right to visit the Philippines and assist his brother. Michael Clarke now claimed to have also been “re-born” being baptized in an oil drum in the prison yard. David Clarke, before arriving, did make one concession to local fears.

Discussions dissuaded Albert Wilson from visiting with him, so one problem was out of the way. David Clarke and Gordon Smith duly arrived and met with their Philippine hosts and coordinators, to begin a massive program of preaching not just in Bilibid prison, including to prisoners on Death Row, but also in various areas within reach of Manila, including the cities that used to host the huge U.S. bases, **Angeles City and Olongapo City**.

In these places, they not only preached in various non-conformist churches, but inside the jails. To the amazement of their local critics, they achieved an amazing success, especially in the prisons. **Literally hundred of prisoners** expressed that they wanted to learn more about the Gospel and themselves “be saved”.

The religious will say this is a miracle. To the cynical, analysis tends to induce just how big a failure the Catholic Church has been in the Philippines. In the Philippines, well over 80 percent claim to be

Catholic. Indeed, most will have been baptized in a Catholic Church. Yet as over 54 percent drop out of school in primary, and even those who go to Mass will only listen to the homily, most of them know very little about Christianity. The fact that two very ordinary men, not wearing the “magic” vestments of priesthood, relate in simple terms, stories and the meaning of what is in the Bible, must have a huge impact. For the first time in their lives, they understand what being a Christian really means.

What makes it even better is that David Clarke readily confesses to them that 30 years previous, he was an incarcerated criminal, and that he discovered Jesus on an LSD trip. These men could, and did, relate to him. He was one of them, once. David’s book, **“Converted on LSD Trip”** has just been published, which tells the whole story.

Critics Silenced

The critics have been silenced and instead applaud. Both David Clarke and Gordon Smith carried out their mission with dignity and respect for the Philippine people, and in fact, had proved to be a credit to the British people. Positive results have been achieved. They have suggested a scheme where prisoners can enter the ministry and preach in other prisons. This is under consideration. If their scheme is adopted and prevents recidivism, then their mission will indeed have been worthwhile.

Alan Atkins
11th September 2001

Our Second Mission

In order to fulfil our mission and undertaking to help many inmates who hag believed the gospel we returned on a second mission in October 2003, however we face trouble which meant I had to secure a full time visa permit to continue my stay in the Philippines and mission work to the Jails.

Help Requested From The UK

In order secure the necessary details to obtain a missionary visa I wrote to the Police in Fareham , Mr Ramsbottom, the pastor of Luton Bethel Gos[el Standard Church, Mr Janes, one of our Trustees at the Bierton Church, Mr Crane our Church overseer from Lakenheath Strict Baptist Church and also Mr Peter Jacob an elder of the Portsmouth Gospel Church. This was in order to secure confirmation of

my affidavit stating who I was and my credentials. I had to present evidence to the Philippine Authorities of my legitimate credentials.

Thankfully I received some help from Mr Ramsbottom who replied to my request and so did and also Mr Janes but the sad thing was Mr Janes, one of our trustees of the Bierton Church, did not tell of the closure of our Bierton Chapel.

Also Mr Peter Jacob due to the bad reports, which were spread in the UK about our work in the Philippines, refused to help in any way. He would not confirm that I had attended their meetings and had been in good standing. I felt so alone and let down. I recalled at that time that it was this man, along with one of his elders and a so called lady Reverend that who opposed the first publication of my book, “Converted on LSD Trip”.

I am sure the Apostle Paul felt forsaken, as I did when he wrote, For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica. 2 Tim 4 verses 10.

Help from the Chief Chaplain

I received help form the Chief Chaplain for the Philippine Prison Ministries, Rev. Monico Carany assisted me and with his direction and assistance of the Christian Missionary Services at Pasay City, I had to undergo medical and psychological examinations including X-rays, HIV test and intelligence tests, and as a result I was cleared and accepted with the Psychological Report. I was thankful for this as I had herd from the UK **my mental health had been called into question**. Just as they stated Jesus was beside himself and had a devil.

Medical and Psychological Examination

Date of examination 2nd April 2003.

Interpretation of findings

The subject possesses an average intellectual functioning and is able to express his thoughts and views. Has been noted to be responsive and open to social contacts. Observed to be work orientated and has a very positive outlook in life.

Emotionally, the subject manifests slight insecurities and loss. Evasive tendencies are relatively minimal.

Remarks:

Recommended.

My application was accepted and my admission

status from a temporary visit under Section 9 (a) to Quota Immigrant Visa under Section 13 of the Philippines Immigration Act of 1940, as amended in my favor and granted to Rev. David Clarke a British National on the 10th April 2003.

It cost me in excess of Php 100,000.00 (£1000 GBP) to gather together and pay for all the required tests, examinations and documentation. The result was that I could permanently work, according to our Articles of Incorporation throughout the Philippines, as a missionary and return to the UK for two months of the year before having to return. It was some comfort to learn the results of this examination as I had heard that my sanity had been called into question and it had been rumoured that I was ill. The truth of the matter was I had incensed the religious carnal mind, in certain religious men, who were then moved by another set of principle other than that the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ. I was thankful for the scripture record that told me this was a normal reaction from ungodly men. Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, **Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil? Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.** John 8 48-49.

40 My return to the UK

The Closure of the Bierton Chapel

I returned to the my UK, in July 2003 and I spoke to Mr Crane, our Bierton church overseer as he informed me that the Bierton chapel had been closed for worship, on the 22nd December 2002. I recalled noting that this was at exactly the same time that I was continuing my ministry, preaching and teaching the Gospel in Baguio City, where 30 souls had confessed their faith in the lord Jesus, and that being through the work of William Poloc, who was our sent man. As a result I baptized 30 souls who had been added to the Church, so confirming the ministry of William C. Poloc. I had baptized them in my capacity as a sent minister from the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Church.

Mr Crane suggested that I return to Bierton and reopen the chapel and he informed ne that the Association of Grace Baptist Churches LTD (South East), 7 Arlington Way, London EC1R 1XA, had taken on the responsibility of the churches property. They had taken the Bierton Church Trust Deed from

the lawful Trustees, Mr Janes, Mr Martin, Mr King and Mr Baumber who had expressed they were too old to bare the responsibility of looking after the chapel.

It transpired that our Bierton Trust Deed had been lodged with one of our senior church members solicitors, which is a fact that is important when registering property with the Land Registry for the first time. They had recovered the Bierton Trust deed from the Solicitor of our church member when she died.

When I approached the Association of Grace Baptist Churches LTD to use our chapel for the ministry work they refused permission. This was because they wanted to sell the chapel and profit from the sale. They had hastily gone on with demolition work, contrary to the terms of trust, seeking to sell the Chapel, at a profit once they had acquired planning permission. Where as I had already negotiated and planned that summer to bring two Filipino Particular Baptist ministers to the UK to visit various churches and our chapel would have been the ideal solution for some of our meetings. The Association of Grace Baptists Churches LTD were not concerned or interested in carrying out the wishes and desires of the original church founders and church members of the day. To their shame.

They first of all denied that we were a Gospel Standard Church and my standing as a member of the Church. When I sent them a copy of my book, “The Bierton Crisis 1984” and letters of confirmation from Mr. Ramsbottom along with Mr. Cranes confirmation that Mr Crane had suggested and supported my request to re open the chapel, they tried to say I was no longer a member. This was despite my bringing to their attention the fact of our strict rules, in relation to cessation of membership ensured that I by default remained a member of the church along with Irene Mary Holloway and Mr A king. The truth was that I along with Irene Mary Clarke (now Holloway) were still church members as our membership continued. The Church never terminated our membership and Mr Crane confirmed this in writing and I had presented this information to the Association of Grace Baptists Churches LTD with my application to use our chapel.

When I stated that they were not the lawful trustees, as the Church had not elected them to that position, I was ignored. I asked them to confirm that the copy of the Trust Deed that I held was one and the same as

the one they had recovered from our deceased church member, they refused my request. This was because the trust deed states who were the legitimate Trustees, how they are to be elected and the responsibility of church members.

Trustees were to be elected by the church and to be men who believed and supported the doctrines stated in the indenture. The reality was that the Bierton Church was a Gospel Standard Cause and had no association with Grace Baptist churches. The church would never have elected this Association to be its trustees because their beliefs were those of the London 1869 Baptist Confession, and not those of our Church, which was the Bierton Church and Gospel Standard.

Michael’s Death and Burial

Michael sadly died in New Bilibid Prison on the 27th May 2005 and the **Association of Grace Baptist Churches LTD** refused to allow us to use our chapel for a memorial service of celebration regarding Michael’s life death and conversion from crime to Christ.

Michael Testifying To Men on Death Row



Asking Men To write their Testimonies

Death Row New Bilibid Prison

Therefore because of this refusal of the Association to allow us to use our chapel, after all Michael was baptized in the Philippines, received by me and others as a Christian and was considered to be a member of the Bierton Church.



Michael’s Tomb Stone Bierton Chapel Chapel

Our memorial Service at the Bierton Chapel Cemetery April 2005

Michael in his Coffin



Michael Asleep

Michael Tomb stone or Plaque of Remembrance



He Being Dead Yet Speaketh

Funding of the Mission

I don’t wish to really talk about money, as the Lord provided funds for his work in His own way. How ever because evil men and people who pry into other peoples business, and also to silence the gainsayers, for the record both Michael and I provided all the funds from our personal resources. And between September 2000 and May 2005 we provided all the funds for the mission work, to the tune of £50,000.00. English

We received no funds from anywhere else except a gift from the Christian Gospel Church, of £400, in July 2001. Our Trojan Horse funds supplied all the return airfares for all our 4-team members, all their accommodation expenses and travel arrangements for the 2002 mission. The mission was paid for by my Michael and I the directors of Trojan Horse. We had no funds from anywhere else and we did not seek sponsorship. The accounts for our Trojan Horse are available upon request.

A Decision To Stay In The Philippines

It was during the second mission to the Philippines that we had some serious difficulties and I received some serious news from England. The first blow was I got news of my wife’s divorce petition and as a result I felt it right to remain in the Philippines, rather that return to the UK and deal with all the evil hurtful side of a divorce. I decided that it would be better to bring further assistance to Michael and complete the work that we had begun. This matter is told in my book “**Converted on LSD Trip 2nd Edition**”.

Opposition To Our Work

Without going into two much detail we encountered remarkable opposition on this mission and a lot of obstacles were presented to us, in the form of serious life issues. Issues that would affect any one involve in the ministry who were seeking to preach the gospel and issues that effect to all classes of men.

It was almost as though some one was deliberately seeking to put a stop to all the good work we were doing. On every hand we it difficulties and hurt and opposition. Issues that I felt compelled to record and write about, This I have done in my book, “**Before the Cock Crows**”.

Work Planted in Baguio Continues

In January 2003 we went to Baguio city and I baptised 22 inmates in Baguio City Jail and 9 inmates in Benguet Provincial Jail, all the result of the work of **William O. Poloc**, or first sent man as a Trojan Warrior.

Thankfully our work in the Philippines was not in vain and we can report that our man William O. Poloc was our sent minister of **Trojan Horse International**. This I believe is confirmation, or the first indication that many such men will follow. I was

170

OUR SECOND TRIP TO BAGUIO CITY

Chapter 41

called by the lord and sent by the Bierton Church and now my brother Michael had been called and we had now sent William O. Poloc on his mission that as we will show has been very fruitful. I believe this to be a vindication, by the lord, that I stood for the right things when at the Bierton Church in my contention for the cause of God and truth and also with those, in the Philippines, that turned from the way of grace, to follow the traditions of men.

Benguet Provincial Jail



William at Benguet Provincial Jail

I tell the truth in my defence and confirmation of the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. I believe we are living proof of the truth that all things work together for good to them that love God and are the called according to his purposes. Rom. 8 verse 28. That the things that have happened to me have turned out rather for the furtherance and confirmation of the gospel.

William is committed and he continues to this day as an independent minister teaching the doctrines of grace (TULIP).

William Poloc Our Sent Man



William Poloc talking to the Warden
Benguet Provincial Jail

41 Our Second Trip To Baguio City

And Benguet Provincial Jails

We visited both Baguio City and Benguet Provincial Jail in December 2002 and after a number of visits by William Poloc to these inmates I baptized 22 prisoners who had been converted from crime to Christ in Baguio City Jail and also 8 souls in Benguet Provincial Jail and to that work. You may see the YouTube video relating to this mission

[Bierton Particular Baptists:](#)

[Our Second Visit to Baguio City](#)

Our Video’s outlining the Work (Video)

[1 Trojan Warriors : The Beginnings](#)

[2 Trojan Warriors: The Vision](#)

[3 Trojan Warriors: Our Doctrinal Basis](#)

Thankfully our work in the Philippines was not in vain and we can report that our man William O. Poloc was our sent minister of **Trojan Horse International**. This I believe is confirmation, or the first indication that many such men will follow. I was called by the lord and sent by the Bierton Church to preach the gospel in 1982 and now my brother Michael had been called and we had now sent William O. Poloc on his mission that as we will show has been very fruitful. I believe this to be a vindication, by the lord, that I stood for the right things when at the Bierton Church in my contention for the cause of God and truth and also with those, in the Philippines, that turned from the way of grace, to follow the traditions of men.

I tell the truth in my defence and confirmation of the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. I believe we are living proof of the truth that all things work together for good to them that love God and are the called according to his purposes. Rom. 8 verse 28. That the things that have happened to me have turned out rather for the furtherance and confirmation of the gospel.

News from the Philippines

Re: News Up date confirming the ministry
Wednesday, 28 March, 2012 1:32
From: “William Poloc sr”
<williampolocsr@yahoo.com>
To: “David Clarke” nbpttc@yahoo.co.uk
To God be the glory!

CHAPTER 41

OUR SECOND TRIP TO BAGUIO CITY

171

We are all doing great anyway and my family as well. Regards to everyone. God bless!!

In Christ.

Dear David,

God’s work here in the Northern Philippines bloomed most especially here in the city of Baguio.

The Baguio Christ- Centred Church also multiplied with the following daughter churches and other ministries.

Pastor’s Day



Christ - Centred Ministries Philippines

We have:

- 2 The Pilot- Christ - Centred Church,
- 3 The Kamog Christ - Centred Church
- 4 The Christ - Centred Church Theological School (TULIP).
- 5 The Christ- Centred Radio Ministry, The Christ- Centred Jail Ministries etc.). We’ll, we are truly blessed by these works He has entrusted to us.

Registration Trojan Horse International

Due to the opposition that we experience from within New Bilibid Prison I felt it the right thing to do to register our ministry with the Securities Exchange Commission my self with the help of a Filipino Particular Baptist Pastor.

It was on the 16th January 2003 that I met a Particular Baptist pastor Ronaldo I. Lopez, at the Internet office in Muntinlupa City and we shared our experiences. H stepped in and assisted me in many

ways and for which I am very thankful to this day.

I noted the day, as this was exactly 23 years to the day of my conversion from crime to Christ. With Ronaldo’s assistance I registered our Trojan Horse international (TULIP) Phils Incorporation with the Securities Exchange in SEC Commission Building, EDSA, Greenhill’s, Mandaluyong City,

Our Security Exchange Registration Certificate



Trojan Horse International (TULIP) Phils. Incorporated Registration Certificate.

(The necessary proof of our existence in the Philippines as far as the natural man is concerned).

No Rest For The Sole Of My Feet

Gen 8 verse 9.
But the dove found no rest for the sole of her foot, and she returned unto him into the ark, for the waters were on the face of the whole earth: then he put forth his hand, and took her, and pulled her in unto him into the ark.

Serious Errors Held

By A Strict Baptist Minister

On my return to the UK I sought fellowship with like-minded believers, only to find that my views about Christian truth were not accepted and I was informed I would not be accepted into fellowship with a certingroup of Strict Baptists Churches.

Bierton Particular Baptist College

Bierton Strict and Particular Baptists continues
I continue the ministry that I was commissioned too by our church, in 1982 and despite the fact that religious men have taken away our chapel. It has

been decided to operate in a different way. All communication with the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist’s may now be directed to our office address 11 Hayling Close, Fareham, Hampshire, PO14 3AE.

This ministry continues in the form of the Bierton Particular Baptist College, which is an Open Internet Cloud facility. It is set up to teach and educate students wishing to educate themselves in Doctrinal and Practical divinity or theology.

Initially this will be in the form of an Access Course to Higher Education, To also teach men to preach the gospel of Christ, which will include historical and sociological studies. It is planned that our course of study will be underwritten by the Open University or a similar qualifying educational body. This will give graduating students educational status to continue their studies any where in the world.

The doctrinal basis for this college is the Articles of Religion of the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist Society (Church), founded in 1831.

As the former Secretary of the church I still hold a copy of the original indenture relating to the founding of the Bierton Church and the minutes of our meetings, which can be read on our web site. This indenture specifies how the church is to elect its own trustees. The trust is a 1000-year trust, which commenced in 1832.

Our trustees failed in their responsibilities to the trust and our Bierton Church Chapel, and property, have been disposed of and religious men have taken the inheritance, yet the work of preaching Christ to men goes on. I write and inform my readers all about this in my book, “The Bierton Strict and Particular Baptists, My Testimony and Confession.” Alternatively: Set for the Defence and Confirmation of the Gospel.

Oliver Cromwell

Oliver Cromwell soon learned he had to train the men of England in the art of warfare to achieve his objectives. Likewise the Israelites needed help in their day of trouble. Remember the scripture:

Now there was no smith found throughout all the land of Israel: for the Philistines said, lest the Hebrew make them swords or spears:

So it came to pass in the day of battle, that there was neither sword nor spear found in the hand of any of the people that were with Saul and Jonathan:

I Sam 13 19.

Education Is The Way Forward

Since the Philistines have taken our Bierton Chapel this cannot stop the work of God. The Bierton Particular Baptist College is like the Open University, were students might partake in a disciplined course of study by distant learning. Leading to a degree of knowledge in Doctrinal and Practical Divinity. The basic foundation will be based upon the First London Baptist Confession of faith, 1646, 2nd Edition, and all associated learning will be treated. Including history, the social influences of the 17-century. Oliver Cromwell’s cause in England and Europe. The study will include the works of men like John Bunyan, Dr, John Gill, Dr John Owen, Joseph Philpot, William Huntington to name just a few.

Our Bierton Church articles of religion were written in 1831, which was before the Gospel Standard magazine was first published. However we aligned ourselves to the Gospel Standard Cause, in January 1981.

Those who know their history will be aware of all those conflicts and contentions that have arisen, so our philosophy is to start from the First London Baptist Confession, 1646, which is fairly comprehensive, and learn by examining these tenets and principles of truth by means of academic study and not indoctrination.

In our studied we will be treating the subject of the value and reliability of the Authorized Version of the bible, in order to ensure faithful reference to the Word of God.

A Note To Prospective Teachers

eeWe welcome those who are being taught by the Lord to offer their services. We are sorry we cannot pay you. If you feel directed to offer your help we would welcome your application. Please send us an e-mail to that effect.

A Note To Prospective Students

We welcome those who feel they would benefit from a course of study. We know from experience the value of education for it is the truth that sets men free. Please send us an email with your request to enrol and enquiries regarding the curriculum.

Remaining Members Bierton Church

I, David Clarke am the only remaining active member of Bierton Particular Baptists Bierton. I am a sent minister of the Church and the full proof of my ministry are those 30 souls that I baptized in Baguio

City Jail and Benguet Provincial Jail, in December 2002. This ministry activity being carried out by our sent man William C. Poloc whose testimony is published in our book, “*Trojan Warriors*”. This ministry being under my Directorship.

Website Address for the College:

<http://www.BiertonParticularBaptists.co.uk>

E mail: SecretaryDolores@yahoo.co.uk

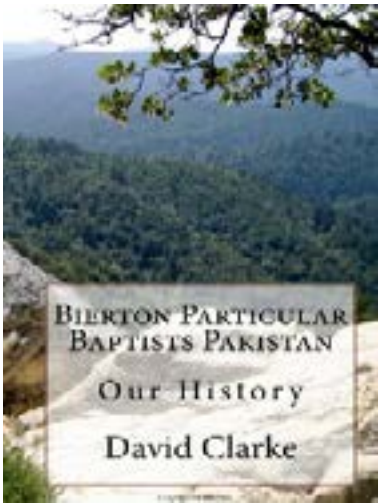
11 Hayling Close Fareham

Hampshire

PO14 3AE

United Kingdom

42 Bierton Particular Baptists (Pakistan)



Our History Paperback – April 30, 2016

Bierton Particular Baptists Pakistan is the first in Pakistan and founded by David Clarke. Mr Clarke is the sole surviving member of Bierton Particular Baptist, founded in 1831. in England, and was a Gospel Standard Cause. This book tells of the formation of Bierton Particular Baptist Pakistan 2016 along with the formation of a Minister Bible college. David Clarke appointed minister Anil Anwar and Anwar Shahid John of Rahim Yar Khan, as overseers work and the articles of religion and doctrinal foundation are those to the Bierton Particular Baptists 1831.

In these we express our belief in the sovereignty of God in creation and redemption and hold to Calvinistic soteriology. We also encourage those interested to investigate Covenant Eschatology, as a means of clearing up some of the many strange views held by some that teach end times theology. This magazine has been published to help Christians encourage and educate each other, in a way free from censorship. We encourage feedback and wish our

readers to contribute further articles for publication. We believe the Lord Jesus Christ is the eternal son of the living God who alone is the saviour of mankind whether **Muslim Gentile or Jew**.

Minister Anil Anwar belong to Ch. Yaqoob Sohotara Family a very well known Family in Rahim Yar Khan. He receive his academic education from Sindh and back to Rahim Yar Khan in 2008 received a religious education from Chris church.



Anil Anwar Anwar Shahid John David Clarke

Ministers

David Clarke is the sole remaining member of Bierton Particular Baptists 1831, who’s testimony and conversion from crime to Christ is told in Bierton Strict and Particular Baptists ¹ and The Bierton Crisis². David is the founder of Bierton Particular Baptists Pakistan 2016 and appointed minister Anil Anwar and minister Anwar Shahid John of Rahim Yar Khan, responsible to the work in January 2016.

This work being an extension of Bierton Particular Baptists and its teaching ministry in the UK.

The articles of religion that form the doctrinal basis for this first particular baptists work in Pakistan are those of Bierton Particular Baptist formed in 1831 alone with some additions to take into account changes necessary to preserve doctrinal truth and practices in this generation. We believe that these articles, that we now call Bierton Particular Baptists Pakistan, reflect those teachings know as the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ and in essence are those of Bierton Particular Baptists 1831³.

These articles were complied by David Clarke, the sole remaining member of Bierton Particular Baptists 1831

1 Bierton Strict and Particular Baptists ISBN-13: 978-1508408277

2 The Bierton Crisis ISBN-13: 978-1508465959

3 These may be viewed in Appendix 1 of this document

How ever each appointed minister will be able to expound each and every article of belief.

Chairman Official Minister



Anwar Shahid John Son of Chuadary Yaqoob Sohotara and the fifth Son in Chuadary Yaqoob Sohotara Family. Choudary Yaqoob Sohotara family is very well known Christian Family in Rahim Yar Khan. Anwar Shahid John Got his academic Education from Khawaja Fareed College Rahim Yar Khan. He is Chairman Christchurch Bierton Particular Baptist and the Official Minister of Bierton Particular Baptists ordained by Minister David Clarke Founder & Chairman Bierton Particular Baptists.

Introduction

A Society of Particular Baptists⁴ were formed as a church, in a village called Bierton, Buckinghamshire, England in 1831. The church became a Gospel Standard listed⁵ cause, in January 1981 and continued to meet in the Bierton Baptist chapel until, December 2002, when all but one member died. David Clarke is the sole remaining member of the church and has appointed Mr Anil Anwar and Anwar Shahid John, of Rahim Yar Khan, Pakistan to form Bierton Particular Baptists, Pakistan.

Articles of Religion

The following articles of religion are framed as the basis of their doctrinal position and also for the Minister Bible College⁶ which is a project of Bierton Particular Baptists Pakistan.

These articles of religion are an extension of and a more comprehensive set of the original Bierton Particular Baptist articles of 1831⁷.

These articles are written as a means of edification and for clarification, we do not expect each person seeking to join the church to fully understand all points mentioned as they are the weightier matters of Christian religion⁸. They have also been written with some knowledge that unclear motives that have cause distress⁹ to many in Particular Baptists churches.

4 Bierton https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bierton#None_Conformist_Particular_Baptist_Place_of_Worship

5 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Strict_Baptist_churches

6 See Appendix 2 of the documents

7 listed in Appendix 1 of this document.

8 2 Pet. 3:16

9 See [Difficulties Associated with Articles of Religion: A Cause of Concern, by David Clarke ISBN-13: 978-1532953446 https://tsw.createspace.com/title/6235109](https://www.createspace.com/title/6235109)

Our Objectives

Our objectives are to introduce each appointed minister, at home, in the UK and abroad and those preparing for appointment to undergo personal study of the scriptures and so confirm the truths of our articles religion. We encourage this study by all who are seeking to follow Christ. Bierton Particular Baptist College Bible Collage is an extension of Bierton Particular Baptist Pakistan, were we pursue the same objectives of exposition and teaching of these biblical truths.

43 Bierton Particular Baptist College

In The UK and Pakistan

In the interests of furthering the cause of God and Truth we have reproduced Dr John Gills Body of Doctrinal and Practical Divinity as a course text book for our College. The college is based in **Rahim Yar Khan**, Pakistan which is open to on line students wishing to study with us. The course will be at degree level and a diploma award given to successful students.

Our Study Text Books



A Body Of Doctrinal And Practical Divinity

Further Work Outreach Mission

In order to promote the gospel I felt it right at that to turn my story into an opera with a difference as reported in The Portsmouth News, in March 2014.

<http://www.portsmouth.co.uk/news/lecturer-turns-his-misspent-youth-into-a-punk-opera-1-5908142>

However this Punk Rock opera was designed to be performed in prisons and has yet to be performed. The event was published in The Bucks Herald

news parer in Aylesbury.

The Bucks Herald

Dave Stages Punk Opera

About religious conversion while high on LSD



By Hayley O'keefe

Monday 17 February 2014

A man who converted to Christianity while high on LSD watching a screening of Easy Rider has produced a punk rock opera about his life....

Dave Clarke, who grew up in Aylesbury, spiralled into a life of crime in the 1960s with his brother Michael.

But following a spiritual awakening in a town cinema while high on LSD, Dave turned his life around and converted to Christianity.

And now, with the help of punk band Asylum Seekers, the story has been made into an opera entitled Borstal Boy.

Dave, who used to be part of popular sixties Mod group Fowler Mean, said: "I gave LSD to four of my friends and we went to see Easy Rider at the old Odeon.

"I got the horrors and paranoia and I was frightened of killing myself. I said 'Jesus please help me.'

"All of a sudden peace came upon me and I heard his voice speak to me saying 'I've been with you Dave, you've been searching for me for a long time,' I turned my life around that night."

The opera is based on Dave's book of the same name, but the writer hopes that actually seeing actors perform his story will appeal to a wider audience

He said: "There are ways for people to turn their lives around but they need help."

He added: "I realised that people simply don't read

books because they are not a quick fix.

"I didn't know how to get the story out but then decided the way to do it was to turn it into a punk rock opera."

The show premieres in Portsmouth this year, but Dave hopes it will be performed in jails around the country and has written to Aylesbury MP David Lidington asking for his help.

After his conversion Dave became a preacher and all but lost touch with his brother.

But in 1987 he heard in a news bulletin that Michael had been arrested in the Philippines for promoting child prostitution.

Not wanting to give up on his brother, Dave travelled to the country and helped his imprisoned sibling have his own religious awakening.

The pair then told their story to hundreds of inmates in the Philippines, and Dave wrote a book which has been distributed in prisons worldwide.

He added: "My brother died of TB the year before his release from prison, the only consolation for me was that he had that turn around."

An Invitation To Pakistan

To Whom it may Concern



My name is **Anil Anwar** from Pakistan and a teaching minister at PSSS Christchurch School. I am also an Executive director at Bierton Particular Baptists in Pakistan. I first met David Clarke in a Christian Authors group on Facebook in 2015 and came across his book Converted on LSD Trip and after reading I was really inspired by his change of life and him coming to Christ.

We have had many conservations on different topics discussing the Christian work we were doing in **Rahim Yar Khan** and his work in the UK and the Philippines , and finally I requested him to join with us and open Bierton Particular Baptists a branch in Pakistan, Rahim Yar khan. In January 2016 I was ordained as Particular Baptists Minister for Pakistan by David Clarke.

In 2017, we worked together with **Anwar Shahid John** and founded **Christian Times Magazine**, an International Christian, News and Political Magazine

through this we are spreading the Gospel of Christ and also supporting Christian refugees in Thailand and others around the world....and trying to contact with Western governments to open doors for Christian refugees.

We also support President Trump policies and we think that his policies are good for America and all Christians around the world. We are hoping that Marie Le-Pen, the French presidential Candidate will win the Presidential election and hopefully she will open doors for Christian refugees.

We are also looking forward to June 8th 2017 the British General election and hope and pray that God will send good people in the coming government to support the restoration of Christianity in Britain again.

Yours Sincerely

Anil Anwar

Bierton Particular Baptists Pakistan ,Mao-Murbarik Road, Youhanabad Rahim Yar Khan, Punjab, Pakistan, 64200.

Anil.Anwar@aol.com

Christian Times Magazine Pakistan PK

<http://www.pssschristchurch.tk>

FaceBook

<https://www.facebook.com/christiantimesmagazine/>

[Anil Anwar An Introduction A Video Introduction To David Clarke \(Youtube Video\)](#)

The News

Fareham's 'Borstal Boy'

Preaches At Pakistan Peace Conference



The Portsmouth News

Kimberley Barber

Thursday 04 February 2016

Dave Clarke has written a punk opera called Borstal Boy. David A FORMER Borstal boy who wrote a book on converting from crime to Christ has been invited to be the guest speaker of the first annual peace conference in Pakistan. Dave Clarke is the author of Converted on LSD – a book based on his real-life experience of finding religion and putting crime behind him while on a bad trip of the

drug. He has even turned his story into a punk rock opera, with the help of Gosport band The Asylum Seekers, called 'Borstal Boy', which follows his life from staying in a youth detention centre to him learning of his brother's death in prison. After posting his work on a Christian author's Facebook page, he received a call from Anil Anwar, director of Christchurch Peace Council, who invited him to speak at the Pakistan Conference which takes place later this month. Dave, of Hayling Close, Fareham, said: 'I wanted to tell our story to help others. 'I couldn't believe it when I got the call. Now this Borstal boy will be in Pakistan preaching to others.' Dave's book, which also tells the tale of Dave's life growing up and committing crime in Aylesbury before he moved to Fareham in 1988, will be translated for the conference. Arrangements are currently underway for visits to the local prison where he will be preaching the gospel to prison inmates.

The 66-year-old former Fareham College electronics lecturer goes to Pakistan on February 21 and returns on February 29. For more information about his journey in Pakistan go to Biertonparticularbaptists.co.uk. Dave also says that plans for his punk rock opera, which was meant to be shown at the Kings Theatre in Southsea but had to be cancelled, are still underway and he is lining up dates for it be performed in prisons. Dave has also been getting some acting practice, as he is playing the role of Rev Johnston in a play called Our Country's Good, which is due to be performed from February 10 until February 20 at The Titchfield Festival Theatre in St Margaret's Lane. For tickets call 01329 556156.

Read more at:

<http://www.portsmouth.co.uk/news/fareham-s-borstal-boy-preaches-at-pakistan-peace-conference-1-7196711>

Borstal Boy's Visa Problems

Kimberley Barber

The News Wednesday 02 March 2016

A FORMER Borstal boy who wrote a book on converting from crime to Christ has had to postpone a visit to speak at the first annual peace conference in Pakistan. Dave Clarke, from Fareham, is the author of Converted on LSD – a book based on his real-life experience of finding religion and putting crime behind him while on a bad drug trip. The 63-year-old former Fareham College electronics lecturer was due to go to Pakistan on February 21, however problems with him obtaining a visa left him stuck in the UK. Dave, of Hayling Close, said: 'I felt so disappointed as I was unable to travel.' The conference was postponed because Dave could not get a visa and he hopes to reschedule for later this month. For more go to www.Biertonparticularbaptists.co.uk.

Read more at:

<http://www.portsmouth.co.uk/our-region/fareham/borstal-boy-s-visa-problems-1-7242631>

Bierton Particular Baptists

None Conformist Place of Worship

A Society of Particular Baptists were formed in Bierton, in 1831. Their Articles of Religion declare they were Protestant, Calvinistic Baptists.



Bierton Particular Baptists None Conformist Place of Worship

The church meet for worship at the Bierton Baptist Chapel, originally called the school house, that was constructed in 1832 and enlarge in 1835.



Indication of the date of build and enlargement

The church became a Gospel Standard cause in 1981 and the last minister sent to preach by the church was in 1982. An unusual outreach meeting was held at the Bierton Baptist Chapel on 5 June 1983, that attracted the attention of Aylesbury's Bucks Herald news paper. The chapel was closed for worship in 2002, after all the former members died, and it was eventually sold in 2006 and the trust deed were lodged with HM Land Registry [1] and later sold as a domestic dwelling. There remained one sole surviving member of the church who continues his ministry as the Director of Bierton Particular Baptists College now functioning in an international capacity founding the Christchurch Bierton Particular Baptists, Rahim Yar Khan, Pakistan, which has a [2] and is the President and Managing Director of the international Christian Times Magazine.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bierton#Bierton_Particular_Baptists_None_Conformist_Place_of_Worship

The church became a Gospel Standard cause in 1981 and the last minister sent to preach by the church was in 1982. An unusual outreach meeting was held at the Bierton Baptist Chapel on 5 June 1983, that attracted the attention of Aylesbury's Bucks Herald news paper. The chapel was closed for worship in 2002, after all the former members died, and it was eventually sold in 2006 and the trust deed were lodged with HM Land Registry [1] and later sold as a domestic dwelling. There remained one sole surviving member of the church who continues his ministry as the Director of Bierton Particular Baptists College now functioning in an international capacity founding the Christchurch Bierton Particular Baptists, Rahim Yar Khan, Pakistan, which has a [2] and is the

Christmas Times Magazine Issue 2



44 Christian Times Magazine

In December 2016 Anil Anwar published the Maiden edition of our monthly magazine seeking to promote the gospel of the lord Jesus Christ.



Our Maiden Edition

This contains a collection of articles written by Christians from international locations. It is published in commemoration and thanks giving for the fact that Donald Trump has been elected, by the people of the United States of America, to be their president. It is believed that he promises to make America great again by giving her people freedom of expression to share their Christian faith without persecution allowing them to express those things that are wrong without suffering oppression. Bierton Particular Baptists, Pakistan were formed, in January 2016, by Anil Anwar a minister of Christchurch of Rahim Yar Kan, Pakistan and their Articles of Religion are published under the title, 'Bierton Particular Baptists



My Christmas Message (for this issue)



My Christmas Message 2016

To those in Pakistan and our readers worldwide of our newly published Christian Times Magazine, not only in the US but the UK , Asia and Europe. By David Clarke President of PSSS Christchurch Bierton Particular Baptists Pakistan.

In response to the various critical comments and views recently expressed to me by, those who object to religion and in particular Christianity for that matter, on the basis that Historically Christianity is the greatest cause of war throughout the world and for that reason they have no time for religion.

Christian Times Magazine, Issue 9



Leading story SHARI'A LAW in the UK by Dr. Alan C. Clifford. Check out our vast range of articles and Latest news stories, and get your monthly fix of news and updates Christian Times Magazine is your one, stop, shop for world wide news and entertainment

Amazon.co.uk and Amazon.com
<https://wwwcreatespace.com/7424833>

I wish to say that historic religious persecution and present persecution, whether it be by so called Christian, Jew Muslim or other, in the name of their religion is not freedom of religion but denial of freedom and is defiantly not Christianity. And it is not true to say that Christianity is the cause of such evil but rather man and his perversion of Christianity. And that perversion is well known and rejected by all Christians.

We maintain that there is no such thing as a Christian nation, and England was never a Christian nation (only in name only). There is no such thing as being a Christian by natural birth or because you have Christian parents as is assumed and believed by many, for a man must have a spiritual birth or be born again to enter the kingdom of God. The kingdom of Christ is a kingdom not of this world.

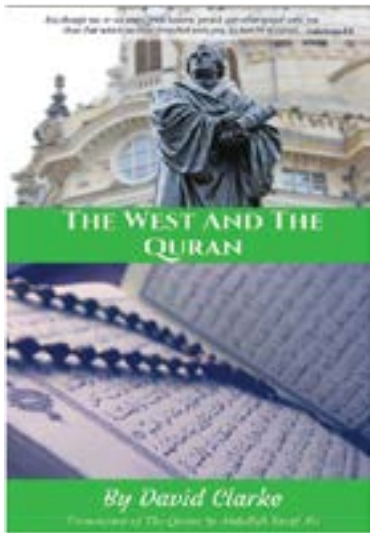
There are some who assert that Islam is a religion of peace how ever the declared objective of Islam is to rule the whole world and be ruled by Sharia Law, by what ever means possible. That is not the way of peace but the opposite. Our ministers living in Rahim Yar Khanm of the PSSS Christchuch Bierton Particular Baptist Pakistan are seeking to show that Christianity is the way of peace, peace between man and God and between themselves. We believe the gospel and teaching of Christ it is way to change the worst of men and so bring peace among men and not war. To do this minister Anil Anwar and myself have worked together to publish our Christian Times Magazine, the first ever to be published and circulated from Pakistan and we invite others to be involved by contributing articles for publication.

So I wish to say the following:

Islam by the very creed and essence of its teaching does not promote religious liberty. Conversion by forced conformity or by the sword is not freedom. Christianity teaches men to live if possible and be a peace with all men.

A Christian believes the record given by God in the bible concerning his son the lord Jesus Christ.

The West And The Quran



A Translation of The Quran

By David Clarke

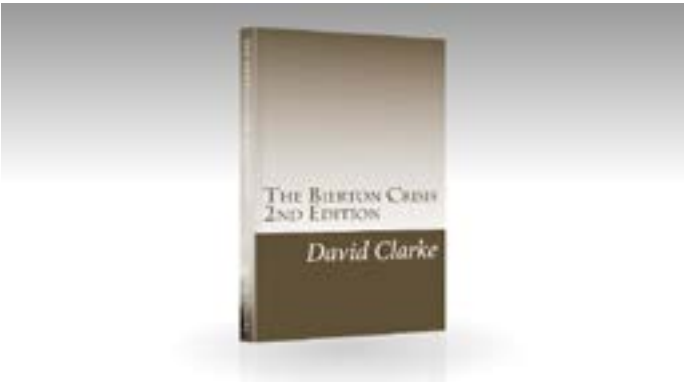
This Publication treats the subject of the Quran and the reason for presenting this is due to a rise in Islamic terrorism which has caused great concern to many in the West. So with the current massive influx of Muslim’s migrating from the various parts of the world into Europe, Great Britain and the USA, it seems reasonable to discover the roots of Islam in order to deal with the problems that have occurred. Our Politicians seem clueless on how to deal with this enemy and when they are questioned they appear to know relatively little about Muhammad and his teaching. One of our greatest Prime-ministers in Britain William Gladstone declared the Quran an “Accursed book” and once held a copy of Muhammad’s Quran up in Parliament, declaring: “So long as there is this book there will be no peace in the world”. Winston Churchill was one of the greatest leaders of the 20th Century, who served as Prime Minister of the United Kingdom during World War II and again from 1951 to 1955. As an officer of the British Army in 1897 and 1898, he fought against a Pashtun tribe in the north west frontier of British India and also at the Battle of Omdurman in Sudan. In both of those conflicts, he had eye-opening encounters with Muslims. These incidents allowed his keen powers of observation and always-fluid pen to weigh in on the subject of Islamic society. While these words were written when he was only 25-years-old (in 1899), they serve as a prophetic warning to Western civilisation today. “How dreadful are the curses which Mohammedanism (Islam) lays on its votaries! Besides the fanatical frenzy, which is

as dangerous in a man as hydrophobia in a dog, there is this fearful fatalistic apathy.” Churchill apparently witnessed the same phenomenon in several places he visited. “The effects are apparent in many countries: improvident habits, slovenly systems of agriculture, sluggish methods of commerce and insecurity of property exist wherever the followers of the Prophet rule or live.” He saw the temporal and the eternal tainted by their belief system. “A degraded sensualism deprives this life of its grace and refinement, the next of its dignity and sanctity,” he wrote. The second-class status of women also grated at the young officer. “The fact that in Mohammedan law every woman must belong to some man as his absolute property, either as a child, a wife, or a concubine, must delay the final extinction of slavery until the faith of Islam has ceased to be a great power among men,” he noted. “Individual Muslims may show splendid qualities, but the influence of the religion paralyses the social development of those who follow it. No stronger retrograde force exists in the world.” Well before the birth of modern Israel, its terror tactics and drive for world domination were felt. “Far from being moribund, Mohammedanism is a militant and proselytising faith. It has already spread throughout Central Africa, raising fearless warriors at every step, and were it not that Christianity is sheltered in the strong arms of science, the science against which it (Islam) has vainly struggled, the civilisation of modern Europe might fall, as fell the civilisation of ancient Rome.” With the influx of Muslim people from the various parts of the continent along with their culture all of which is shaped by the teachings of Muhammad in the Quran. Some objections and Observations are as follows: Islam means submission Islam does not mean peace Multiculturalism is a failure. Islam denies the natural rights of women An Objection Halal Meat An Objection To Shari-ah Law Objects to Female Genital Mutilation (FGM) An objection to Jihad which seeks over throw Western culture through education, Social activity, political activation and Law. For this reason, this publication is made available for education purposes. With this prayer that God may grant us all wisdom as to how we may respond to the rise and threat of Islam.

Amazon.co.uk Amazon.com

<https://wwwcreatespace.com/7354328>

The Bierton Crisis



A Testimony of David Clarke

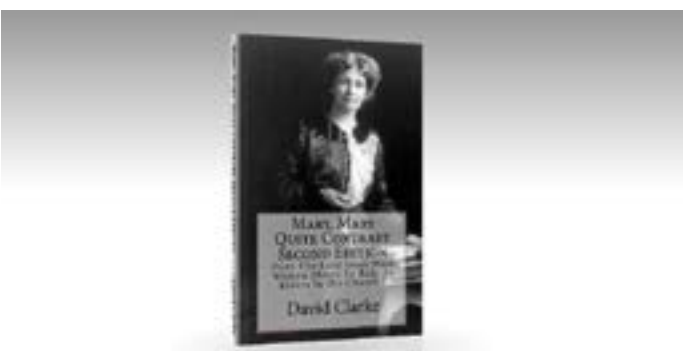
The Bierton Crisis is the personal story of David Clarke a member of the Bierton Strict and Particular Baptist church. He was also the church secretary and minister sent by the church to preach the gospel in 1982. The Bierton Church was formed in 1831 and was a Gospel Standard cause who’s rules of membership are such that only the church can terminate ones membership. This tells of a crisis that took place in the church in 1984, which led to some members withdrawing support. David, the author, was one of the members who withdrew but the church did not terminate his membership as they wished him return. This story tells in detail about those errors in doctrine and practices that had crept into the Bierton church and of the lengths taken to put matters right. David maintained and taught Particular Redemption and that the gospel was the rule of life for the believer and not the law of Moses as some church members maintained. This story tells of the closure of the Bierton chapel when David was on mission work in the Philippines in December 2002 and when the remaining church members died. It tells how David was encouraged by the church overseer to return to Bierton and re-open the chapel. On David’s return to the UK he learned a newly unelected set of trustees had take over the responsibility for the chapel and were seeking to sell it. The story tells how he was refused permission to re open or use the chapel and they sold it as a domestic dwelling, in 2006. These trustees held doctrinal views that opposed the Bierton church and they denied David’s continued membership of the church in order to lay claim too and sell the chapel, using the money from the sale of the chapel for their own purposes. David hopes that his testimony will promote the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ, as set out in the doctrines of grace, especially Particular

Redemption and the rule of life for the believer being the gospel of Christ, the royal law of liberty, and not the law of Moses as some reformed Calvinists teach, will be realized by the reader. His desire is that any who are called to preach the gospel should examine their own standing and ensure that they can derive from scripture the doctrines and practices they teach and advance and that they can derived the truths they teach from scripture alone and not from the traditions of men or their opinions however well they may be thought of.

Amazon.co.uk Amazon.com

<https://wwwcreatespace.com/6347857>

Mary Mary Quite Contrary



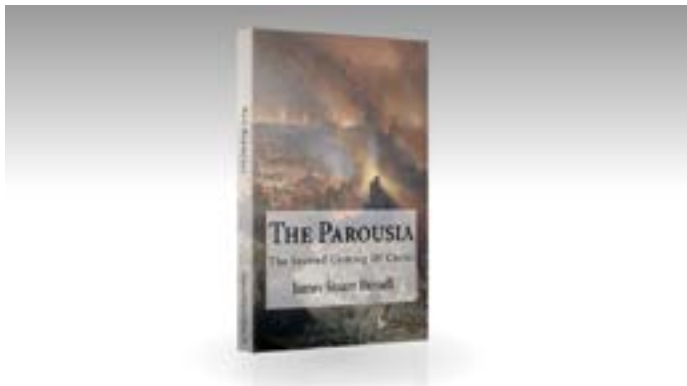
By David Clarke

When treating the subject of women elders in the church we are not dealing with the affairs of a secular society and so it has nothing to do with women’s rights, equality of sex or race in the world. This matter only relates to men and women in a Christian church. It is about the rules of the house of God, which is the church of the living God and rules for those who are members of the body of Christ and members of an heavenly county. The Suffragettes Emmeline Pankhurst 1858 -1928) was a Suffragette and worked very hard to bring equal rights for women to vote as men. In the year of her death all women over 21 gained the right to vote. The Suffragette movement brought about many changes for the better in a secular society but not so for women seeking to follow Christian principles. One of her famous quotes was, “Trust in God She shall provide”. Terms which do not reflect Christian beliefs. We know God will provide and He is not a she. In the USA and the UK, women’s political rights were brought into general political consciousness by the suffragettes and since then there have been legal rights granted to the Lesbian, gay, bisexual and transgender groups, same

sex marriages, along with the development of the feminist movement and the appointment of persons from the LGBT community to responsible positions in the Church of England. All of this has caused conflict in the Christian community due to differences beliefs of right and wrong. This book seeks to show what the bible has to say about the role of women in the church and family. Since these rules are taught by the Apostles of Christ they are the word of God to us and we should obey. The secular world may differ and turn from the narrow path taught in scripture but we should follow the word of God, this is our wisdom.

All books available from **Amazon.co.uk and Amazon.com or CreateSpace.com**
<https://wwwcreatespace.com/5540458>

The Parousia



James Stuart Russell

A reformation – indeed – a revolution of sorts is taking place in modern evangelical Christianity. And while many who are joining in and helping promote this movement are not even aware of it, the book you hold in your hand has contributed greatly to initiating this new reformation. This “new” movement is sometimes called full preterism, (Also, and preferably by this writer, Covenant Eschatology). It is the belief that all Bible prophecy is fulfilled. The famous evangelist Charles H. Spurgeon was deeply impressed with the scholarly, solid research in the book, although he did not accept the “final” conclusions reached by Russell. In modern times, this work has, and continues to impress those who read it. The reason is simple, the New Testament is emphatic and unambiguous in positing Christ’s coming and the end of the age for the first century generation. To say this has troubled both scholars and laymen alike is an understatement of massive proportions. This book first appeared in 1878 (anonymously), and again in 1887 with author

attribution. The book was well known in scholarly circles primarily and attracted a good bit of attention, both positive and negative. The public, however, seemed almost unaware of the stunning conclusions and the research supporting those conclusions, until or unless they read of Russell’s work in the footnotes of the commentaries. Scholars have recognized and grappled with this imminence element, that is the stated nearness of the day of the Lord, seldom finding satisfactory answers. Scholars such as David Strauss accused Jesus of failure. Later, Bultmann said that every school boy knows that Jesus predicted his coming and the end of the world for his generation, and every school boy knows it did not happen. C.S. Lewis also could not resolve the apparent failed eschatology. Bertrand Russell rejected Christianity due to the failed eschatology - as he perceived it - of Jesus and the Bible writers. As a result of these “skeptical” authors, modern Bible scholarship has followed in their path and Bible commentaries today almost casually assert the failure of the Bible writers - and Jesus - in their eschatological predictions. This is where Russell’s work is of such importance. While Russell was not totally consistent with his own arguments and conclusions, nonetheless, his work is of tremendous importance and laid the groundwork for the modern revolution known as the preterist movement. Russell systematically addressed virtually every New Testament prediction of the eschaton. With incisive clarity and logical acumen, he sweeps aside the almost trite objections to the objective nature of the Biblical language of imminence. With excellent linguistic analysis, solid hermeneutic and powerful exegetical skills, Russell shows that there is no way to deny that Jesus and his followers not only believed in a first century, end of the age parousia, but, they taught it as divine truth claiming the inspiration of the Holy Spirit as their authority. Russell not only fully established the undeniable reality of the first century imminence of “the end,” he powerfully and carefully shares with the reader that “the end” that Jesus and the N.T. writers were anticipating was not the end of the time space continuum (end of the world). It was in fact, the end of the Old Covenant Age of Israel that arrived with the cataclysmic destruction of Jerusalem and the Temple in AD 70. Russell properly shows how the traditional church has so badly missed the incredible significance of the end of that Old Covenant Age.

Russell’s work is a stunning rejection – and corrective -- of what the “Orthodox” historical “Creedal” church has and continues to affirm. The reader may well find themselves wondering how the “divines” missed it so badly! Further, the reader will discover that Russell’s main arguments are an effective, valid and true assessment of Biblical eschatology. And make no mistake, eschatology matters.

Amazon.co.uk Amazon.com
<https://wwwcreatespace.com/5906802>

Don K. Preston.

Contact Details

Secretary Dolores
Publications Office
11 Hayling Close,
Fareham, Hampshire,
United Kingdom
Email : nbpttc@yahoo.co.uk
+447411990007

SPEAKING ENGAGEMENTS

David Clarke is available for speaking Engagements in the UK and abroad.

Anil Anwar is available for speaking engagements In Pakistan

Christian Times Magazine

For Article Submission
Editor: Anil Anwar
Mao-Murbarik Road,
Youhanabad,
Rahim Yar Khan,
Punjab,
Pakistan 64200
Email: Anil.Anwar@aol.com